



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

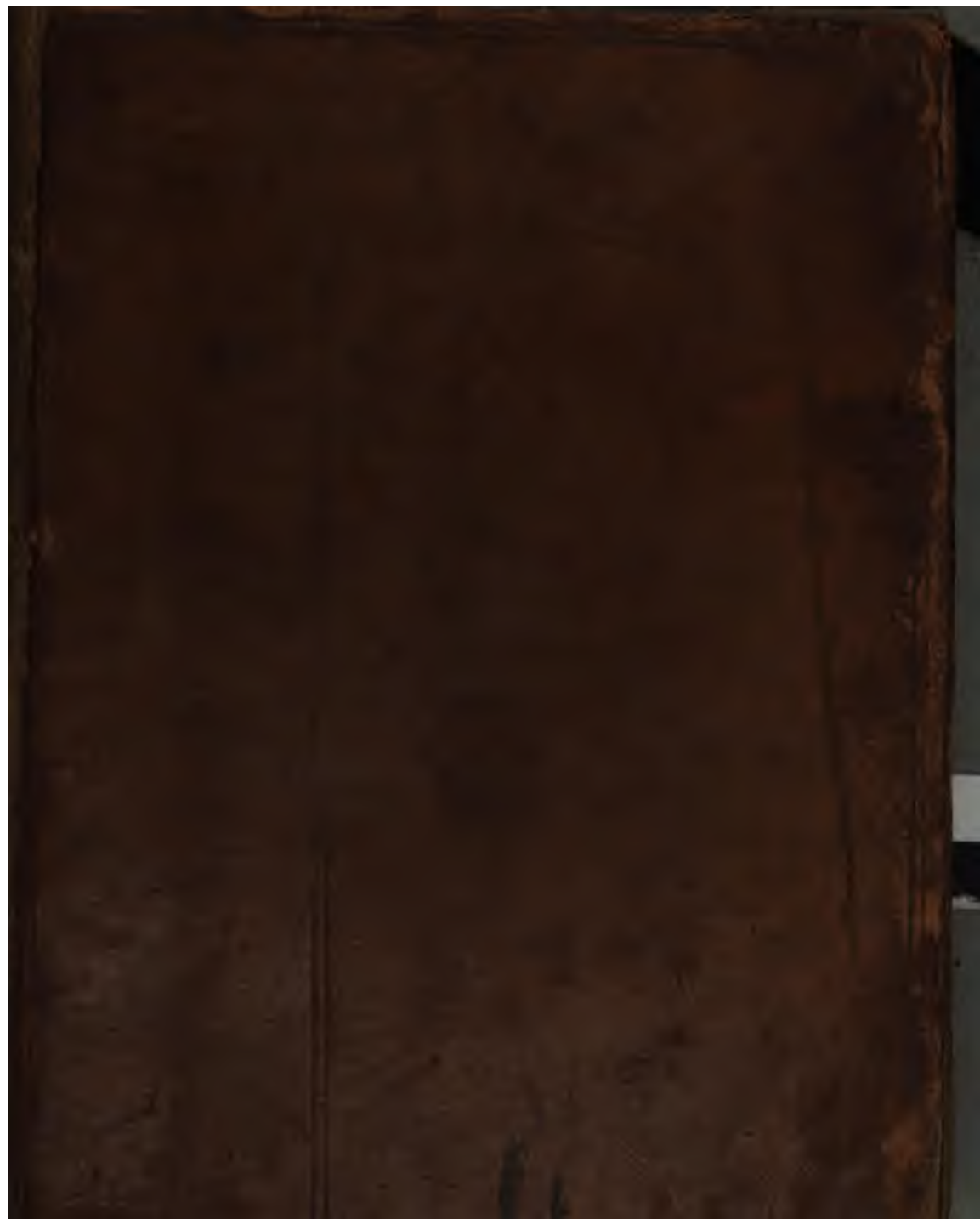
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



141. y. 156.







VINDICIÆ  
FIDEI,

OR  
A TREATISE  
of Iustification by Faith,  
*wherein the truth of that point  
is fully cleared, and vindicated  
from the cavills of it's  
Adversaries*

Delivered at Magdalen Hall  
in Oxford; By WILLIAM  
PEARCE, M<sup>r</sup> of Arts.

The second Edition.

*And be found in him not having mine owne righte-  
ousnesse which is of the Law, but that which is through  
the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which is of God  
by Faith.* PHILIP. 3. 9

AT OXFORD,  
Printed by JOHN LICHFIELD,  
Printer to the Vniversitie, for  
EDWARD FORREST. 1629





TO  
**THE RIGHT  
VVORSHIPFULL**

**M<sup>r</sup> D<sup>r</sup> WILKINSON** Princi-  
pall of *Magdalen Hall: The Masters,*  
*Bachelours, and other Students of*  
*that flourishing Society.*

\* \* \* \*

**SIRS,**



Vstome hath made De-  
dication of Books almost  
as common, as Printing  
of them: and Wilsdome  
directs there to dedicate,  
where we owe either re-  
spect, or thanks: this  
worke therefore is Yours  
by right, the Author thereof ( who is now with  
God.)

---

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

---

God) vndertaking it at your request, and performing it amongst you for your good, so that now to bestow it vpon you is not a gift, but retribution: and I hope, it will both stirre you vp to be carefull to continue fit men to stand vp in his place, and remaine to his successours as a patterne of imitation, if it bee too high for emulation. To commend this Author to you, were to bring Owles to Athens, and for me to commend the Worke, would not adde much worth to it: I knowe nothing can disparage it, vnlesse it be a naked Margent: but you and all that will bee pleased to take notice of his yeares, and great abilities in all humane learning, will confesse hee could not haue time to read many Fathers, and so that defect may be easily pardoned. For hee had fully finished sixe lusters of yeares, yet had he thoroughly traced the circle of the Arts, and attained to an eminencie, not onely in those ordinary Sciences, wherein all Schollers haue some smattering, but euen in those sublimer speculations of which all are not capable, few search after: For hee was expert in the *Mathematickes* both mixt, and pure: his skill in Histories was also praise-worthie: some time he spent (and not without

---

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

---

without successe) in trauailing to learne forraine languages, and much trauaile in the study of our home-taught tongues, that he had worth to haue beene Professour either in *Greeke* or *Hebrewe*: all which endowments, as they might afterwards haue enabled him to read with much profit, so could they not chuse but preuent younger yeares from reading at all the Ancient Fathers: so that it was not want, but abundance of learning that tooke vp his time, and prevented his Margent, and therefore I hope shall not disparage this worke. The first weapon young Fencers learne to vse is single Sword, when they are Masters of that, they enlarge their skill; our Author was but young, let it not prejudice him, that he first vses onely the sword of the Spirit, the word of God; especially sith that is so dextrously weilded, that by it alone hee hath deadly wounded the Romish *Leviathan*: Therefore (as in my knowledge) these Lectures were heard with much applause, so doe I perswade my selfe, they will bee read with great approbation, and occasion the publishing of other Lectures, and priuate labours, wherein he tooke no lesse paines, nor deserued lesse praise, then in his

---

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

---

publique endeaours. So hoping that you will  
accept this small paines of mine, I take my leaue  
and rest

*From Tewkesbury this  
9 of Iuly 1629.*

*Yours: willing to doe you greater,  
though not more acceptable  
service,*

IOHN GEREE.

---

---

---

## To the Christian Reader.



Entle Reader, this Treatise was neither finished nor polished by the Author: Hee left it with mee when he died, to bee dealt with as cause should require; upon persual, I found it fit for the time, so full of life, so sound and cleere in prooffe, that in my conceit it will doe much good: & here thou hast it, as he left it. The argument is of all, in difference betwixt vs & Papists, the chiefeft, no controuersie more disputed, and lesse agreed upon then this. Christ & his blood is the maine cause of our spirituall peace; Papists and others diuide with him, and take something to themselues: the spirituall priae that is in the heart of man, would faine haue a finger in the worke of saluation, of other controuersies betwixt vs and the other party: some be for the Popes Kitchen, some for the Popes crowne, but this of our iustification, toucheth the life of grace to the quick, breeds more in our flesh then any, and those sicknesses are most dangerous, that come from within. It is a fundamentall case, wherein to faile takes away the essence of a christian: wherefore sith there is now such need to haue the world confirmed in this truth of God, I thought good to send this booke abroad, wherein this is put out of question to any man of a single eye; that we are not iustified by any thing wee can doe or suffer.

Many write bookes, and confute them themselues when they haue done; but this our Author what he wrote, he beleueed; for being to die, hee confirmed this Truth, in a discourse full of life and power, and professed to take his last upon it, that it was the very truth of God. Wee reade that some learned Papists, when they are to giue vp the ghost, disclaime  
their



---

## To the Christian Reader.

---

*their owne merits, and would faine finde all in Christ alone: but this our Author did it before sundry, with that life, and feeling, and cleare apprehension of the loue of God in his son, that such as heard him, and loued him well and long, could not well tell, whether they should weepe, or reioice; weepe to see a friend die, reioice to see him die so. Good Reader, learne this holy instruction out of this booke: that wee are not to bee found in our owne righteousness at all and belceue it; thou shalt haue as he had, peace passing all vnderstanding, in life, and in death, for being iustified by faith (not by workes) wee haue peace with God saith Saint Paul. If any ingenuous learned Papist would undertake to answer this booke, me thinkes I might prophecy that as Vergerius (Bishop of Capo d'Istria, & Nuncio to Clement the seuenth, and Paul the third) reading Luther, to answer Luther, was conuerted, and had his soule saved. And as Pighius, though of a peeuissh spirit enough, yet reading Caluin, to confute Caluin, was in the very doctrine of Iustification confuted himselfe, and wrought with vs. So I say, would a modest Papist read this booke to reply vnto it, he could not but see the truth, and yeeld vnto it. For though many haue done excellently in this argument, yet to speake my opinion freely, at least for perspicuity, this surpasseth them all. Farewell.*

*Thine in Christ, Rich. Capel.*



# A TREATISE OF IVSTIFICATION

## CAP. I.

*The explication of these tearmes, First, Iustice, or  
Righteousnesse. Secondly, Iustification.*



Having by Gods assistance dispatched *sect. I. c. I.*  
two of those generall points at first  
proposed (touching the Antecedents  
and Nature of true Faith) we are now  
by the same helpe to goe forward to  
the third generall head; namely, con-  
cerning the Consequents of Faith,  
which were two, our *Iustification* in regard of God, and our  
*Obedience* in regard of our selues. The former will shew vs  
how to iudge of the dignity and excellent worth of Faith;  
being so farre honoured in Gods gracious acceptance, as to  
be made the blessed instrument of our spirituall peace and  
comfort flowing from our Iustification. The latter will di-  
rect vs how to make triall of the truth of our faith in the dis-  
covery of that vnseparable Vnion which there is betweene  
beleeuing, and obeying.

Let vs begin with the former, our *Iustification*, the doctrine whereof I shall endeauour to deliuer vnto you, as briefly and plainely, as so large and difficult a subiect will giue leaue. Wherein because the opening of the word will giue vs some light for the vnderstanding of the matter: wee are in the first place to see what is meant by these words, *Iustification*, and *Iustice*, or *Righteousnesse*.

*Iustice*, therefore, or *Righteousnesse* (that I meane which is created, for of vncreated *Righteousnesse*, wee haue not to speake) is nothing but a perfect conformity and agreement with the Law of God. For Gods will being originally, essentially, and infinitely righteous; must needs bee the patterne and rule of all deriatiue & finite *righteousnesse*. Now this *righteousnesse* (though but one in its substance, neuertheless) admits a double consideration, being called either,

1 *Legall* and of *Workes*, which stands in that conformity vnto Gods law, which is inherent within our selues, when in our owne persons and workes wee possesse and practise that *righteousnesse* which is required of the Law.

This *Legall Iustice* is also double.

1 Of *Obedience*, when all such things are done, as the Law commandeth; & left vndone which it forbids. He that doth so is a iust man.

2 Of *Punishment* or *Satisfaction*, when the breach of the Law is satisfied by enduring the vtmost of such penalties, as the rigour of the Law required. For not only he who doth what the Law commandeth: but euen he also that suffereth all such punishments, as the Law-giuer in iustice can inflict for the breach of the Law, is to bee accounted a iust man, and reckoned after such satisfaction made, as no transgressor of the Law. The reason of this is plaine from the nature of penall Lawes. For

For first, where the penalty is suffered, there the *will* of the *Law-giuer* is satisfied; for as much as his will was, either that the law should be observed, or the punishment vndergone. If therefore he, to whome the law is given, doe either: he satisfies the will of the *Law-giuer*. Had his will beene absolute, so that nothing else could haue contented him, but only obedience: then it had beene a vaine thing to haue prescribed a determinate penalty. But when as a penalty is limited in case of disobedience, 'tis manifest that though the intent of the *Law-giuer* was in the first place for obedience; yet in the next place it should suffice, if there were satisfaction by bearing of the penalty.

Secondly, the good and benefit of the *Law-giuer* is hereby also satisfied. For it is to bee supposed in all penall lawes, that the penalty limited is every way proportionable and equivalent vnto that good, which might accrew by the observation of the law. Else were the wisdom of the *Law-maker* iustly to be taxed, as giuing an apparant encouragement to offenders; when they should see the penalty, not to be so much hurtful to them; as their disobedience were gainefull. Hee therefore that suffers the penalty is afterward to bee reckoned as if hee had kept the Law: because by his suffering, he hath aduanced the *Law-giuers* honour, or benefit, as much as he could by his obeying.

2 *Euangelicall*, and of *Faith*, which is such a conformity to Gods Law as is not inherent in our own persons; but being in another is imputed vnto vs & reckoned ours. The righteousness of the Law, and of the Gospell, are not two severall kinds of righteousness; but the same in regard of the matter and substance thereof: only they differ in the subject and manner of application. The righteousness of workes is that holinesse and obedience which is inherent in our

owne persons and performed by our selues: the righteouſneſſe of Faith is the ſame holineſſe and obedience inherent in the perſon of *Chriſt* and performed by him; but imbraced by our faith, and accepted by God, as done in our ſteed, and for our benefit.

Theſe are the diuers acceptions of this word Iuſtice or Righteouſneſſe; ſo farre as it concernes the point in hand.

In the next place we are to enquire of this word *Iuſtification*, which being nothing but the making of a perſon iuſt or righteous, may be taken in a double ſenſe. For a perſon is made iuſt either by *Infuſion*, or *Apologie*. We will take it in theſe tearmes for want of better.

I 1 *Iuſtification* by *Infuſion*, is then, when the *habitual quality* of *Righteouſneſſe* and *Holineſſe* is wrought in any perſon by any meanes whatſoeuer; whether it bee created and infuſed into him by the worke of another; or obtained by his owne art and induſtry. Thus *Adam* was made iuſt, *Eccleſ. 7. 29* God hauing giuen vnto him in his creation the inherent qualities of Iuſtice and holineſſe. Thus alſo the regenerate are made iuſt, in as much as by the holy Ghoſt, they are ſanctified through the reall infuſion of grace into their ſoules; in the which they increaſe alſo more and more, by the vie of exerciſe and all good meanes.

2 2 *Iuſtification*, by *Apologie* is, when a perſon accused as an offender is iudicially or otherwiſe acquitted and declared to be innocent of the fault: and ſo free from the puniſhment. When the innocency of a party accused is thus pleaded & declared; he is thereby ſaid to be iuſtified, or made iuſt: according as, on the contrary by accusation and condemnation, a party is ſaid to be made vniuſt. As 'tis plaine by that of *Iſaiah, 5. 23*. [*They iuſtifie the wicked for a reward: and take away the righteouſneſſe of the righteous from him*] that  
is

is, they condemne the righteous, which is a making of them vnrighteous in the sight and estimation of men. So in 1. *Ioh.* 5. 10. [*He that beleueth not God, hath made him a lier*] because vnbeleeuers doe in their hearts call Gods truth into question: and accuse him to be false of his word. So againe, *Psal.* 109. 7. [*when he is indged, let him bee condemned.*] *פֶּשַׁע נַפְשׁוֹ*. Let him goe out a wicked person. For so his condemnation makes him (that is) declares him to be. But here further it must be obserued, that this *Iustification* of a person, by pleading to, and absolution in iudgement, is of two sorts; according as the persons to bee iustified, are likewise of two seuerall conditions.

1 Some are truly and inherently iust, being no Transgressors of the law; either at all; or not in that whereof they are accused. In this case if any crime, or suspition of crime, be laid to their charge; they are iustified; either by a plaine deniall of the fact, alleaging that the fault whereof they are accused, was neuer by them committed; or by denying the euill of the fact, alleaging that in so doing they haue done well, because they haue done what the law commanded; & thats their warrant. Thus *Samuel* iustifies his gouernment against all surmise of fraudulent and wrongfull dealing, that the people might imagine by him, in 1. *Sam.* 12. 3. &c. Thus *David* cleares himselfe before God, from that crime of conspiracie against *Saul* his Master, and seeking of the kingdom (which *Cush* and other Courtiers accused him of) professing his innocency; and desiring God to iudge him according to his righteousness and integrity in that behalfe: as it is *Psal.* 7. 3. 4. 8. There need not other instances in so plain a matter. Those that are iustified by this meanes are iustified by that Righteousnesse which is of the *Law* and of *workes*. By which plea though man may bee iustified before man:

yet in the sight of God no flesh living shall be iustified. As hereafter we shall see.

2 Some are not truly righteous in themselves : but are in their own persons transgressors of the law. These (when they are accused ) have no other meanes whereby they may be iustified, but by confessing the crime , and pleading *satisfaction*: that for their transgression against the Law , and offence thereby against the Law-giver, they have fully satisfied by doing or suffering some such thing , as by way of iust penalty hath bene required of them. Now hee that can plead such a full and perfect satisfaction, ought therefore to be accounted innocent , and free from all desert of further punishment (for tis supposed he hath endured the utmost of evill the Law could inflict: ) and so he is to bee esteemed of, as if he had not at all violated the law. For plenary satisfaction for a fault, and the *non-Commission* of such a fault , are of equall iustice: & deserue alike iustification. In which point, it must bee noted , that if the party offended doe pardon without any satisfaction taken , there the offender is not iustified at all. And againe if the offence bee such, as there can be no satisfaction made: then it is vtterly impossible that the offender should euer bee iustified. Now this satisfaction which an offender may plead for his iustification , is three-fold.

1 That which is made by himselfe in his owne person. He that can plead this kind of satisfaction, is iustified *Legally* by his own righteousnesse and merits.

2 That which is made by another for him ; When another by consent and approbation of the party offended , interposeth himselfe as *surety* for the party delinquent , in his stead and name to make that *satisfaction* , which is required of the party himselfe. Whether this be done by doing or suffering

suffering the same things which the delinquent should haue done or suffered ; or some other things but of equivalent worth and dignity. Hee that pleads this kinde of satisfaction, is iustified Evangelically by grace, through the righte-  
ousnesse of another imputed to him, and accepted for as his.

3 That which is made partly by himselfe and partly by another. Which kinde of satisfaction may haue place betweene Man and Man: but betweene God and man it hath none at all. Neither by this, nor by that first kinde of *satisfaction* which is done in our owne persons, can any man be iustified in the sight of God, but only by the second sort, that *satisfaction* which is made by another for vs. As wee shall see afterwards.

## CHAP. II.

*In what sense the word Iustification ought to be taken  
in the present controuersie, and of the difference  
betweene vs and our Ad-  
uersaries therein.*



Aving thus distinguished of these words, it followeth that in the first place, we enquire in which of the fore-named senses wee are to take this word *Iustification*. The difference betweene vs and our aduersaries of the Romish Church, is in this point very great and irreconcilable. They affirme that *Iustification* is to be taken in the first acception, for making of a Man iust by infusion of Reall Holinesse into him. So that with them to iustifie, beares the same sense as to *purifie* or *sanctifie*: that is of a person vncleane, vnholie, vniust, to make him formally or inherently *Pure*, *Holy*, and *Iust*, by working in him the inherent qualities of *Purity*, *Sanctity* and *Righteousnesse*.

We



We on the contrary teach according to the Scriptures; That *Iustification*, is to be taken in the second acception, for the pleading of a persons innocency called into question: whereby he is iudicially absolved and freed from fault and punishment. So that with vs to iustifie a person is in iudiciall proceeding to acquit him of the crime whereof he is accused, and to declare him free from delert of punishment. Whether of vs twaine be in the right is very materiall to be determined of, considering that all ensuing disputation touching the *Iustification* of a sinner is to be framed vpon one of these grounds, rightly taken; and an error here is like a threed misplaced at first, that runs awry afterward through the whole peece. Our adversaries plead for their assertion: the *Etymology* of the word *iustificare* is *iustum facere*, in that sense (say they) as *Purificare*, *Mortificare*, *Vivificare*, & many the like signifie to make pure, to make dead or aliue, by the reall induction of such and such Qualities.

Againe, they alleadge *Scriptures*; as namely *Dan.* 12. 3. [*They that turne many to righteousnesse (Heb. that iustifie many) shall shine as the Starres for euer*] *Apoc.* 22. 11. [*Hee that is righteous (iustificetur) Let him be righteous still.*] *Tit.* 3. 7. [*He hath saued vs by the washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost,---That being iustified by his grace we should be made Heires according to the hope of eternall life.*] Againe, *1. Cor.* 6. 11. [*And such were some of you: but yee are washed, but yee are sanctified, but yee are iustified, in the name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.*] Out of these with some other places (but such as haue scarce any shew of good prooffe) they would faine conclude, that by *Iustification* nothing else is meant, but the *Infusion* of the *Habite* of *Iustice* into him, that was before sinfull and vn-  
iust.

Rom. 8. 30.  
Heb. 9.

Hereto

Hereto we answer. 1. First for the *Etymology* that the signification of words is to be ruled, not by Etymologies : but by the common vse:

*Quem penes arbitrium est & vis & norma loquendi*  
as the Poet truly defines. Now its a thing notorious that in the custome of all languages, this word *Iustificare* imports nothing but the declaration of the Innocency of a person; and lawfulnessse of any fact: against such accusations as implead either of vniustice or wrong. I will iustifie such a man or such a matter ( say we in English ) and what Englishman vnderstands thereby any thing but this. I will make it appeare such a man is honest, such a fact lawfull, howeuer questioned to the contrary. In other languages my skill serues me not , nor is it needfull to trouble you with instances. Those that haue written of this subiect of euery Nation; witnesse every one for their owne language. And further this word *Iustificare* being of a latter stamp , vnkowne to such Latine Authors, as are of ancient and purer Language, fitted by Ecclesiasticall writers to expresse the meaning of those two words of the Originall *הצדיק* and *צדקה*; it is apparent the Copy must follow the Originall , and the Latine word beare the same sense as the Hebrew & Greeke words doe. And that this is that legall sense which we haue spoken of is a point so manifest throughout the whole Bible : that nothing but impudency can deny it. As we shall presently perceiue.

For in the next place. 2 As to the Scriptures which they alleadge for prooffe of their interpretation of the word: We answer: That of a multitude of places of Scripture, wherein the word Iustifie is vsed, our aduersaries may truly pick out one, or two, or three that seeme to fauour their assertion of *Infusion of habituall Iustice*: yet haue they gained little  
B thereby.

thereby. For where tenne or more may be alleadged against one in which the contrary signification is vsed, reason tells vs, that an Article and Doctrine of religion ought to bee framed out of the signification of words and phrases, which is vsuall, ordinary, and regular; and not out of that which sometimes comes in by way of particular exception. Might he not be iudged destitute of sense and modesty, that would quarrell at the signification of the word *Ecclesia*, that in the new Testament it is not taken for the company and assembly of the faithfull, because in a place or two (as *Act. 19*) it is taken for any ordinary ciuill meeting of people together? Wherefore we may grant them (חַדְרֵי קֶדֶשׁ in that of *Dan. 12.*) and (δυναμις in *Apo. 22.*) is to be made iust, *formaliter*, by *infusion* of inherent holinesse in a sinner. For so Ministers may be said to *iustifie* many (as it is in *Daniel*) viz. by their Ministry turne many to righteousness, directing them to the meanes of Holinesse, and as Gods Instruments, working in them the graces of conversion and regeneration. And so he that is iust (in the *Apo.*) may be iustified still: (that is) encrease in the inward habit and outward exercise of holinesse more and more. Thus wee may yeeld them in these two places without seeking to other interpretations further off. And yet will this be no prejudice to our doctrine grounded vpon the other signification so generally vsed.

2  
\*Lib. 1. de Iust.  
cap. 1.

I  
See Luke 18.  
14. This man  
went downe  
to his house  
iustified rather  
then the other  
His praier was  
for pardon.  
God be mercifull, &c.  
For he went  
home iustified  
(i.e.) pardoned  
and absolved  
rather then  
the Pharisee.

We answere, that of all those other places alleaged by *Bell.* and *Becanus*,\* there is not any one that doth necessarily enforce such a meaning of the word; as he and his fellowes stand for. These about the rest haue most appearance, namely, *1. Cor. 6. & Tit. 3. Rom. 8. 30.* where *Iustification* is, say they confounded as one and the same with *Sanctification & Regeneration*. Wherevnto I answere that they doe ill to confound those things that the Apostle hath distinguished very plainly.

plainly. He tells the *Corinthians*, that the vnrighreous shall not inherit the kingdome of God, and that themselues had beene such, euen of the most notorious ranck: but now they were washed, sanctified and *Iustified*. By three words the *Apostle* expresth the change of their former condition. One *Metaphoricall* (*ye are washed*) The meaning whereof he declareth in two proper words following. [*ye are Sanctified*] thats one degree of washing or clesning from the corruption of *Nature* (in part) by the [*Spirit of our God*] of whom is the gift of inherent grace. And [*ye are iustified*] thats another sort of washing, from the guilt of *Sinne* (in the whole) [*in the name of the Lord Iesus*] that is, by the Righteousnesse and *Merits of Iesus Christ*. Nothing can bee more perspicuous and elegant. That place to *Tit. Chap. 3.* is also as plaine. *God* (*saith the Apostle*) speaking of the Heires and sonnes of God *in Christ* (hath saued vs [*not by any workes of ours: but by his owne mercy, ver. 5.*] This salvation is set forth to vs in the Meanes and in the End. The meanes are two, *Regeneration* and *Iustification*. [*Hee hath saued vs by the washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost*] This is the first meanes (*viz.*) *Regeneration* expressed, 1. by its properties or parts, 1. *Washing* or doing away of the filthy qualities of our corrupted nature. 2. *Renewing*, the Inuesting of it with new qualities of Graces and Holinesse.

2 By the cause efficient the *Holy Ghost* [whom he hath shed on vs abundantly] or richly, following the *Metaphore*, comparing the *Holy Ghost* in this operation to water powdered out. 2 The Meritorious cause of it [*Through Iesus Christ our Saviour*] who hath procured the sending downe of the [*Holy Ghost*] into the hearts of the elect, ver. 6. This is one step to heauen, our regeneration, but it is imperfect & cannot

Which is referred, *ad gloriam Regenerationis.*

dowes of it) ascribes vnto it what could not bee effected by those, (*viz.*) eternall Redemption [ *vers. 12.* ] purging of the conscience from dead workes [ *verse 12.* ] the putting away of sinne, [ *verse 26.* ] The sanctification of the Elect, [ *Chap. 10. 7. 10.* ] made *Heires* according to the hope of eternall life. In neither then of those places is our sanctification confounded with our iustification: but both distinctly declared, as two seuerall parts of grace and meanes of the accomplishment of our eternall happineffe. 'Tis scarce worth the labour to examine those other Scriptures produced by our Aduersaries, whereof some part doe directly crosse, & the rest doe but only in appearance confirme their assertion. In generall therefore for them, thus much we confidently affirme, that let the Concordance be studied, and all those places examined wherein either [ *הצריך* ] is vied in the old or [ *δικαιωσις* ] in the new Testament: there will not one be found, no not one, in which those words carry any other meaning, then that which we stand for (*viz.*) the clearing of a parties innocence questioned as faulty, and blameworthy. Take a tast of some places.

Rom. 6. 7.  
[ *δικαιωσιν* ]  
significat libe-  
ratur: sed sensus  
loci discrimen  
indicat.

I

I *Iustification* is sometimes applied to God, when Man iustifies God. As *Psalm. 51. 4. Rom. 3. 4.* [ *That thou mightest be iustified* [ *δικαιωθῇς* ] *in thy saying, & mightest overcome when thou art iudged* ] *Mat. 11. 19.* [ *And wisdom is iustified* [ *δικαιωσιν* ] *of her children* ] *Luke 7. 35.* *Luke 7. 29.* [ *And the Publicans iustified* [ *δικαιώσαν* ] *God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.* ] Can there be any other meaning of iustification here: but this onely? That God is then iustified, when his workes, his wisdom, his sacred ordinances, being accused by prophane men, as untrue, vnequall, vniust, and foolish, are by the Godly acknowledged, or any other meanes evidently cleared vnto all men,

to

to be full of all truth, equity, wisdom, and holiness?

2 Man and that

1 Before man in things between man and man. When man iustifies man, *Deut. 25. 1.* [ *If there be a controversie betweene men, and they come vnto iudgement, that the Iudge may iudge them, then they shall iustifie* [ *וְהַצְדִּיק* ] *the righteous and condemne the wicked* ] *Isaiah, 5. 23.* [ *Woe to them which iustifie the wicked for a reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him* ] *Proverb. 17. 15.* [ *He that iustificeth the wicked, & condemneth the iust, euen they both are an abomination to the Lord.* ] *2. Sam. 15. 4.* [ *Oh that I were made Iudge in the land, that euery man that hath any suit or cause, might come to me, and I would doe him iustice.* [ *וְהַצְדִּיקְתִּי* ] In these and many the like places, to iustifie is in iudiciall proceeding to absolue a party from fault and blame : whether it bee rightfully or wrongfully done. *Ezek. 16. 52.* [ *Be thou confounded and beare thy shame, in that thou hast iustified thy sisters* ] speaks God vnto *Ierusalem*; in comparison of whose abomination the finnes of *Sodom* and *Samarina*, were scarce to be accounted any faults. They were Saints to her. Of the Pharisees *Christ* speaks, *Luke 16. 15.* [ *Tee are they that iustifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your hearts.* ] That is, You stand vpon the defence and ostentation of outward Holiness, and deeming it sufficient to make it appeare before men you are holy: without regard of acquitting the syncerity of your hearts before God.

2 Before God; where God iustifies man *Exod. 23. 7.* [ *The innocent and the righteous slay thou not, for I will not iustifie the wicked.* ] by esteeming him as innocent, & letting him goe from punishment. *Isaiah 50. 8.* [ *He is mee that iustificeth me, who will contend with me?* ] saith the Prophet

in the person of Christ, signifying God would make it appeare that he was blamelesse, for the reiection of his people the Iewes who perished for their owne and not his fault. *Rom. 5. 18. [As by the offence of one iudgement came on all men to condemnation: So by the righteousness of one, the free gift came upon all men to the Iustification of life] Rom. 8. 33. 34. [who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods Elect: It is God that iustifies; who shall condemne? 1. Cor. 4. 4. [I knowe nothing by my selfe: yet in this am I not iustified. Hee that iudgeth me is God. q. d. I haue kept a good conscience in my Ministry, but God is my iudge, though my conscience pronounce me innocent, yet God is my sole Iudge that iudgeth me and my conscience. Acts, 13. 38. 39. [Through this man is preached vnto you the forgiveness of sinnes: and from all things from which yee could not be iustified by the Law of Moses; by him every one that beleeneth is iustified.]*

By which places (not to name more) it appeares plainly that iustification is opposed to accusation and condemnation: and therefore can signifie nothing else but the defence and absolution of a person accused for an offender. Which thing is so cleere and evident that it cannot be gaine-said, except by those alone who are wilfully blinde, and obstinately resolu'd to contradict any truth, that makes against their inveterate errors. For our selues, we may not, nor dare not shut our eyes against so cleere light: nor ought we to be so bold when God hath acquainted vs with his meaning; as to follow another of our owne making. And therefore according to the Scriptures we acknowledge and maintaine, that as in other places where mention is made of the iustification of a sinner before God: so in the 2 and 4 Chapters of the Epist. to the Rom. and third Chapter of the Gal. (where the Doctrine thereof is directly handled) by *Iustification* nothing

thing else is meant; but the gracious act of Almighty God whereby he absolues a beleiuing sinner accused at the Tribunal of his Iustice, pronouncing him iust and acquitting him of all punishment for *Christs* sake.

## CAP. III.

*The Confutation of our Aduersaries cauills against our acception of the word Iustification.*



VR Aduersaries haue little to reply against these so plaine places. Somthing they answer, namely. *Beccaus Ibid. Sect. 8.*  
 I That it cannot be denied but that *Iustification*, doth many times beare that sense we stand for. But with all they would haue vs obserue this rule that [*Quotiescunq; in Scripturis Deus dicitur iustificare impium: semper intelligendum est ex impio fasere iustum. God cannot declare a man to be iust: but of vniust hee must make him iust.*] And they giue the reason. Because the iudgement of God is according to truth, *Rom. 2. 2.* Wee embrace this Rule and the reason of it, acknowledging that where euer there is *Iustification*, there must be iustice some way or other in the party iustified. But the question stands still in what manner *God* makes a sinner iust: whom hee in iudgement pronounceth so to be. They say by bestowing on him the grace of *Sanctification* and *perfect righteousness* inherent in his owne person. We affirme, that it is by imputing vnto him the *perfect righteousness of Christ*, accepting *Christs* obedience for his. In which diuersity let vs come as neere them as truth will giue leaue. Thus farre wee goe along with them.

I That there is inherent righteousness bestowed vpon a sinner, whereby of vnholty, impure, vniust, he is made holy, I  
C cleane,



<sup>a</sup> Eph. 4. 24.

Col. 3. 9.

<sup>b</sup> 1. Cor. 3. 16.

& 6. 19.

2. Cor. 6. 16.

Rom. 8.

<sup>c</sup> Rom. 12. 5.

2. Cor. 12. 13.

<sup>d</sup> Ioh. 15. 4.

<sup>e</sup> Ioh. 4. 14.

cleane, and iust. Wee all confesse this worke of the *Holy Ghost* renewing man in the spirit of his minde, restoring in him the <sup>a</sup> image of God in <sup>a</sup> knowledge, righteousnesse, and holinesse. That the *Holy Ghost* dwells in the elect, as in <sup>b</sup> Temples dedicated to his seruice, which hee adorne by communicating vnto them his heauenly graces. That hee makes them liuing <sup>c</sup> members of Christs body: and fruitfull <sup>d</sup> branches of that true Vine. That this grace infused is a fountaine of <sup>e</sup> liuing water springing vp to eternall life. These things we beleeue and teach.

*Cal. Institut. lib. 3.  
cap. 1. 1.*

Wherefore whereas the Popish Doctōrs fall foule on our reformed writers, charging *Calvin* and others for denying all inherent righteousnesse in Beleeuers, and maintaining only an imputed righteousnesse without them: Wee tell them 'tis a grosse calumny forged by peruerse mindes, that list not to vnderstand mens plainest writings. Nor *Calvin*, nor any that ever maintained the truth with him, euer denied the *Righteousnesse* of *Sanctification*. But this hee holds and we also with the Scriptures, that the righteousnes which iustifies vs in Gods iudgement is not in our selues: but all in *Christ*.

*Rom. 8. 30.*

2 That inherent righteousnesse or sanctification alway keep company with *Iustification*, in the same person. Seuered they are neuer in their common subiect (*viz*) a true beleeuer; as appeares *Rom. 8. 30*. But that therefore they must be confounded for one and the same grace and worke of God; may be affirmed with as good reason: as that in the Sunne light and heat are all one: because alwaies ioined together.

3

That by this grace of inherent righteousnesse, a man is in some sort iustified before God. That is so farre as a man by the grace of God is become truly holy and good: so far God esteems him holy and good. God taketh notice of his

owne

owne graces in his children, he approues of them and giues testimony of them in case it be needfull; as appears by the righteoufnesse of *Iob*, *David*, *Zachary*, and other holy men; who were good and did good in Gods sight. Yea in the life to come when (all corruptions being vtterly done away.) the Saints shall bee invested with perfection of inherent holinesse: by the *Righteousnesse* of their owne, and not by any other shall they then appeare iust in Gods sight.

Thus farre we agree with them. But herein now wee differ, that although by the grace of Sanctification infused, God doe make him righteous & holy in some measure that was before altogether vnholie and wicked: neuerthelesse we affirme that by and for this holinesse, the best of Saints living neuer were nor shall be iustified in Gods sight; that is pronounced iust and innocent before the Tribunall of his Iustice. For we here take vp the forenamed rule laied down by our aduersaries, *Whomsoever God pronounceth to bee perfectly iust; hee must needs be made perfectly iust.* For Gods iudgement is according to truth. Now that no man in this life, is made perfectly iust by any such inherent holinesse in him as is able to outstand the seuer and exact triall of Gods iudgment: is a truth witnessed by the Scripture and confessed alwaies by the most holy Saints of God. Our aduersaries indeed stily plead the contrary: teaching that sinne and corruption in the iustified is vtterly abolished. The error & pride of which imagination wee shall shortly haue occasion more at large to discouer vnto you. Meane while let thus much stand for good: that man being not made perfectly iust in himselfe cannot thereby be declared perfectly iust before God: and therefore some other righteoufnesse, & not that of Sanctification is to be sought for, whereby a sinner may be iustified in Gods sight.

2  
*See. Ibid. Pa-  
 rag. 9.*

To that argument of ours from the opposition of iustification to accusation and condemnation confirmed by so many places of Scripture; They answer. That this hinders nothing at all, both may agree to God who of his mercy iustifies some; (that is) makes them inherently iust; of his iustice condemnes other (that is) punisheth them. To which slight answers we make this short reply. That where words are opposite, (as they acknowledge these to be) there according to the lawes of opposition, they must carry opposite meaning. But vnto accusation, condemnation, and punishment nothing is opposite but defence, absolution, and pardon. Where therefore *Iustificare* is coupled with these words; it must needs beare this and no other meaning: of a bad man to make a good is not opposite to accusation, condemnation, or punishment of him: accused he may bee, condemned and punished iustly, and after made good.

I should but trouble you to alleage more of their cavills. Let thus much suffice for the clearing of this point: That iustification and sanctification are to be distinguished and not confounded. The righteousnesse of the one is in vs, in its nature, true and good: but for its degree and measure, imperfect; and alwaies yoked with the remainder of naturall corruption. And therefore if a sinner should plead this before the iudgement seat of God, (offring himselfe to bee iudged according to this righteousnesse and innocency) oh how soone his mouth would be stopped; and this confession wrung from out of his conscience; All my righteousnesse is as filthy ragges! And againe *Vilis sum*; I am vile, what shall I answer thee! But that other righteousnesse of iustification is without vs in Christs possession: but ours by Gods grations gift and acception, & this is every way perfect and vnreproued in the severest iudgement of God. And therefore

fore when a sinner is drawne before the bar of Gods iudgement, accused by the law, Satan, his conscience; convicted by the evidence of the fact, and to be now sentenced and deliuered to punishment by the vnpartiall iustice of God: In this case he hath to alleage for himselfe the allsufficient righteousness of a mighty Redeemer, who only hath done and suffered for him that which hee could neuer doe nor suffer for himselfe. This plea alone and no other in the world, can stop vp the mouth of Hell, confute the accusations of Satan, chase away the Terrors that haunt a guilty conscience, and appease the infinite indignation of an angry Iudge. This alone will procure favour and absolution in the presence of that Iudge of the whole world. This alone brings downe from heauen into our consciences that blessed peace, which passeth all vnderstanding; but of him that hath it. Whereby we rest our selues secure from feare of condemnation; being provided of a defence that will not faile vs, when after death we shall come into iudgement.

## SECT. 2. CHAP. I.

*The Orthodox opinion concerning the manner of  
Iustification by Faith, and the confutation  
of Popish errors in this point.*



Having thus cleared the meaning of this word *Sect. 2. C. 1.*  
[*Iustification*] and shewed that the Scriptures,  
when they speake of the Iustification of a sinner  
before God, doe thereby vnderstand the absolu-  
tion of him in iudgement from sinne and punishment. We  
are now vpon this ground to proceed vnto the further ex-  
plication of this point, to enquire by what meanes & in what  
manner, this iustification of a sinner is accomplished: That

we may goe on more distinctly : I will reduce all our ensuing discourse of this point into three heads.

3 Gen. Heads,

I

First, touching the condition required in them that shall be iustified.

2

Secondly, the matter of our Iustification. (*viz.*) What righteousness is wherefore a sinner is iustified.

3

Thirdly, touching the forme of iustification, in what the quality of this iudiciall act of God, justifying a sinner, consisteth.

I

Generall head

Concerning the first at this time. The condition required in such as shall bee partakers of this grace of justification is true faith, wherevnto God hath ordinarily annexed this great priuiledge; That by faith and faith only, a sinner shall be justified: This the Scriptures witnesse in tearmes as direct and expresse, as any can be. [*Rom. 3. 28. we conclude a man is iustified by faith without the workes of the Law.*] and *Rom. 4. 9. [For we say that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteousness.]* and *Rom. 5. 1. [Then being iustified by faith, we haue peace towards God through Iesus Christ our Lord.]* With other the like places. Whence it is agreed vpon on all sides, that a sinner is justified by faith: but touching the manner, how he is said to be iustified by faith, there is much controuersie and brawle, betweene the orthodoxe of the reformed Churches, and their aduersaries of *Rome* and *Holland*; the *Arminians*, and the *Papists*. The sentence of the reformed Churches touching this point, consisteth of two Branches.

First, that a sinner is iustified by faith, not properly as it is a quality or action; which by it's owne dignity and merit, deserues at Gods hands remission of sinnes; or is by Gods fauorable acceptance taken for the whole & perfect righteousness of the Law, which is otherwise

wife required of a sinner: but only in relation vnto the object of it, the righteousnesse of Christ; which it imbraceth and resteth vpon.

Secondly, that a sinner is iustified by faith in opposition vnto the righteousnesse of workes in the fulfilling of the Law. Vwhereby now no man can be iustified.

In this relatiue and inclusiue sense doe the reformed Churches take this proposition [*A man is iustified by faith*] They explaine themselves thus: There are two Covenants that God hath made with man; By one of which and by no other meanes in the world, saluation is to be obtained. The one is the couenant of workes, the tenor whereof is [*Doe this and thou shalt liue.*] This couenant is now vterly void, in regard of vs; who through the weaknesse of our sinnefull flesh cannot possibly fulfill the condition of obedience required thereby: and therefore we cannot expect iustification and life by this meanes. The other is the couenant of grace, the Tenor whereof is, Beleeue in the Lord *Iesum* and thou shalt be saued. The condition of this couenant is Faith: the performance whereof differs from the performance of the condition of that other couenant. Doe this and liue, is a compact of pure iustice wherein wages is giuen by debt, so that he which doth the work obeying the Law, may in strict iustice for the worke sake claime the wages, eternall life vpon iust desert. Beleeue this and liue is a compact of freest and purest mercy: wherein the reward of eternall life is giuen vs in fauour for that which beares not the least proportion of worth with it: so that hee which performes the condition cannot yet demand the wages, as due vnto him in seuerity of iustice; but only by the grace of a free promise, the fulfilling of which he may humbly sue for. By which grand difference

ference between these two Covenants clearly expressed in Scriptures, it appears manifestly that these two propositions. [*A man is iustified by workes,*] [*A man is iustified by faith,*] carry meanings vterly opposite one to the other. The one is proper and formall: the other Metonymicall and relative. In this Proposition [*A man is iustified by workes*] we vnderstand all in proper and precise termes: That a righteous man who hath kept the law exactly in all points, is by and for the dignity and worth of that his obedience iustified in Gods sight from all blame and punishment whatsoeuer; because perfect obedience to the morall law in it selfe, for its own sake deserues the approbation of Gods seuerer iustice and the reward of heauen. But in that other proposition (*A man is iustified by Faith*) Wee must vnderstand all things relatively thus. A sinner is iustified in the sight of God from all sinne & punishment by faith (that is) by the obedience of Iesus Christ beleeued on; and embraced by a true faith. Which act of iustification of a sinner, although it be properly the only worke of God, for the only merit of Christ: yet is it rightly ascribed vnto faith, and it alone, for as much as faith is that maine condition of that new covenant, which as we must performe if we will be iustified: so by the performance thereof wee are said to obtaine iustification and life. For when God by grace hath enabled vs to performe the condition of beleeuing; then doe we beginne to enioy the benefit of the Covenant; then is the sentence of absolution pronounced in our consciences; which shall be after confirmed in our death; and published in the last iudgement. Secondly, our faith and no other grace directly respects the promises of the Gospell; accepting what God offers, sealing vnto the truth thereof by assenting thereto, and embracing the benefit and fruit of it vnto

to it selfe, by relying wholly vpon it. This interpretation of that proposition the reformed Churches doe admit; and none other: reiecing as erroneous and contrary to the Scriptures such glosses as ascribe any thing to the dignity of faith; or make any combination betweene Faith and Workes, in the point of our Iustification. Amongst which there are three erroneous assertions touching mans iustification by Faith; which we are briefly to examine and refute.

I That faith iustificieth vs [*Per modum cause efficientis & meritoria*] as a proper efficient and meritorious cause. Which by it's owne worth and dignity deserues to obtaine iustification, remission of sinnes, & the grace of well doing.

This is the doctrine of the Church of Rome, which *Belarmine* labours to proue in his 17. *Chap. lib. pr. de iustificatione*, where disputing against iustification by faith alone, hee tels vs. If we could be perswaded that faith doth iustifie [*impetrando, promerendo, & suo modo inchoando Iustificationem,*] then we would neuer deny that loue, feare, hope, and other vertues did iustifie vs as well as faith. Wherevpon hee sets himselfe to proue that there is in faith it selfe some efficacy and merite to obtaine and deserue iustification. His arguments are chiefly two.

I From those places of Scripture, wherein a man is said to be iustified, <sup>a</sup> *ſidē & ſidē*, <sup>b</sup> *in & ſidē*, <sup>c</sup> *ſidē*. Or absolutely without article or preposition. *ſidē per fidem, ex fide* (or) *ſide*. Wherein these Prepositions signifie, faith he, the true cause of our iustification. Which hee proues, 1. By the contrary, when a man is said to be iustified [*ſidē & ſidē*, Or *ſidē & ſidē*]. This notes the true *efficient* deseruing *cause* of his iustification. Secondly, by the like in other places where we are said to be redeemed, saved, sanctified; *Per Christum, per sanguinem, per mortem, per vulnera*; and in the whole 11

<sup>a</sup> Gal. 2. 16.

<sup>b</sup> Rom. 5. 1.

<sup>c</sup> Rom. 2. 8.

<sup>d</sup> Rom. 4. 2.

& 3. 20.

Gal. 2. 16.

Iam. 2.



to the *Heb.* The Saints are said to doe such and such things (*alru*) by faith. All signifying the *proper cause*.

2

From those places of Scripture which (saith he) plainly shew: Faith doth *impetrare remissionem*, & *suo quidē modo mereri*. Such are those [*Thy faith hath saved thee*] or made thee whole. A speech that *Christ* vsed often, as to the <sup>a</sup>woman that washed his feet; to her <sup>b</sup> that had an issue of blood: To the <sup>c</sup>blinde man recouered of his sight. And that to the *Cananitis*h woman [*O woman <sup>d</sup>great is thy faith*] now see what the merit of this Faith was, (*For his <sup>e</sup>saying goethy way the Diuell is gone out of thy daughter*) Thus Abraham, [*being <sup>f</sup>strengthened in Faith glorified God,*] who therefore iustified him for the merit of his faith. And againe in the eleuenth to the *Heb.* by many examples we are taught that by <sup>g</sup>Faith (that is) by the merit and price of Faith *Enoch* & other men pleased God.

a Luke. 7. 50.

b Mat. 9. 22.

c Mar. 10. 51.

d Mat. 15. 21.

e Mar. 7. 29.

f Rom. 4. 20.

g Heb. 11. 5. 6.

For answere herevnto.

1: Vnto the Argument from the Proposition we reply; That if *ix* & *ix* & *ix*, must bee needs strictly taken in the same kinde of causality: then the *Iesuites* should doe well to stand to that and make the similitude betweene Faith and workes runne thus. A man is iustified (*by*) workes that is for the proper and only merits of his obedience; so a man is iustified (*by*) faith, that is for the only merit of his beleeuing in *Christ*: and by that meanes both shall be true and effectually causes of iustification. But if *Bellarmino* dare not thus presse the similitude for feare of being found guilty of despising the blood of the *New Covenant*, attributing that to the merit of faith which belongs only to the merit of *Christ*; hee must then giue vs that leaue to distinguish which he takes to himselfe; and if he fall to his *Qualifications* and *quodam modo's*: he must pardon if wee also seeke out such an interpretation.

pretation of those places; as may not crosse other *Scriptures*. Which for as much as they testifie that (*we* <sup>i Rom. 3. 24.</sup> *are iustified by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ*) that (*All* <sup>k Heb. 1. 3.</sup> *sinne is purged by the blood of Christ*) that (*by the sacrifice of himselfe he hath put away sinne*) and (*with offering hath consecrated for ever them that are sanctified.*) We dare not without horrible sacriledge ascribe the grace of our iustification vnto the worke and worth of any thing whatsoeuer in our selues; but wholly and only to the Righteousnesse of Christ. And therefore when the Scriptures say we are iustified (*by*) faith; wee take not the word (*By*) in this formall and legall sense; wee are iustified by the efficacy of our faith, or for the worth of our faith, according as 'tis vnderstood in iustification by workes: but wee take it *Relatiuely and Instrumentally*: Wee are iustified by faith (that is) by the righteousness of Christ, the benefit whereof vnto our iustification, we are made partakers of by faith, as the only grace which accepts of the promise, and giues vs assurance of the performance. Hee that looked to the brasen Serpēt and was cured, might truely bee said to bee healed (by) his looking on, though this action was no proper cause working the cure by any efficacy or dignity of it selfe; but was only a necessary condition required of them that would be healed; vpon the obedient obseruance whereof, God would shew them fauour: so he that looked on Christ beleeuing in him, may truely be said to bee saued and iustified by faith, not as for the worth, and by the efficacy of that act of his; but as it is the condition of the promise of grace, that must necessarily goe before the performance of it to vs: vpon our obedience wherevnto God is pleased of his free grace to iustifie vs. Nor is this *Trope*, any way harsh, or vniuall to put *Oppositum pro opposito, Relatum pro Correlato*;

n A<sup>o</sup>. 67. &  
65.  
o I. Th. 3. 9.  
& 4. 6.

Virg. Georg. 2.

p Gal. . 23.

q Act. 13. 38.

*Habitu pro Obiecto.* In Sacramentall locutions 'tis a generall custome, to put the signe for the thing signified: and the like is vsed in other passages *ὡς ἡ ἀβυσσὸς τῷ θεῷ ἠνέχετο.* And the word of God *rem, &c.* and *τὸ μυστήριον τῆς πίστεως,* the mystery of faith) and *τοῖς ἀβυσσὸς τῆς πίστεως,* in the words of Faith) and Rom. 8. 24. [*τῷ θεῷ ἐλπίδι ἡμεῶν ἐσμέν.* *Spe servati sumus (id est) Christo in quem speramus.* Hope that is seene is not hope, that is, *res visa non sperata est.* That of Ignatius [*ἡ ἐμὴ ἐλπίς ἐστὶν αἰσώματα*] Like to that (*Christ our joy*) *Anni spem credere Terra*) Georg. 1. And if we list not to bee contentious, 'tis plaine enough, that in those places, where the Apostle treats of Iustification by faith (*πίστις*) the grace of God in Christ; opposing workes and faith, that is the law and the Gospell, the righteousness of the law, to the righteousness of the Gospell, which is no other but the righteousness of Christ. Thus faith is taken, Gal. 3. 23. Where he expressly treats of iustification. But [*before faith came, we were kept under the Law, shut up vnto the Faith, which should afterward be revealed*] That is, before Christ came; and the cleare exhibition of the Gospell, and the righteousness thereof: the Church was kept vnder the ceremoniall law, as vnder a *Schoolmaster*, directing her vnto Christ, that so [*wee might be iustified by faith*] that is, not by the lesson of the law, but by *Christ*; typified and figured vnto vs therein.

2. Vnto the other argument prouing the merit of faith; we reply; that in those places is no ground at all for such a conceit. [*Thy faith hath saved thee,*] faith Christ to some whom he cured both in body and soule. But what? was it by the efficacy, and for the worth of their faith that this was done? No: As 'twas vertue went out of Christ that cured their bodily diseases; & his compassion that moued him to it: so 'twas his grace and merits and free loue that healed their

their foules; and brought them pardon of their sinnes in the sight of God: Yet he saith; their faith saued them, because by beleeuing the sonne of God, they receaued this fauour, though for their beleeuing they did not deserue it. God bestowes mercy where he finds faith, not because faith merits such fauour at his hands: but because hee is pleased to disperse his fauours in such an order, as himselfe hath appointed; and vpon such conditions as he thinks good. To that of the *Canaanitish* woman: Her great faith could not claime by desert, that fauour which Christ shewed vnto her daughter: only Christ was pleased to honour her faith by his testimony of it; & to helpe the daughter at the mothers entreaty. Christ did it vpon that request of hers so instant & full of faith; But yet who can say shee merited ought at Christs hands by that her faithfull and instant petition? Her selfe yet liuing would deny it; and she doth deny it there, counting her selfe a dogge vnworthy of the childrens bread; when yet she beleeued strongly, and was a child of *Abraham* according to the faith. To that of *Abraham* who gaue glory to God, and of *Henoeh* and others, who pleased God by their faith: We answer; that it is one thing for a man to glorifie and please God by his obedience; tis another, by so doing to deserue ought at his hands. If God in much grace and fauour accept of the honour and contentment we are able to doe him by our faith & obedience: It follows not that therefore wee must in iustice merit at his hands: Other arguments for them there are: but so weakly knitt, they fall in sunder of themselues. Against them wee haue to obiect the Scriptures, that so often say, [*we are iustified*] *gratia & gratis*; and the Councell of *Trent*, which they respect more then the Scriptures; which hath defined thus: *Nihil eorum que Iustificationem precedunt, sive*

*opera, ipsam iustificationis gratiam promeretur, Sess. 6. cap. 8.*  
How then can they say Faith merits iustification.

Here our aduersaries haue two shifts to run vnto, whereby they would avoid the absurdity of this Assertion.

1 That this merit is not from vs: but of God. Because Faith is the gift of Gods grace; and therefore though we be iustified by merit: yet we are iustified by grace, because merit is of grace. 'Tis of grace that our faith merits.

Rom. II. 6.

This you may be sure, is some of that smoke of the bottomlesse pit, wherein hell vented out the *Iesuites*, and they their darke imaginations; all to confound whatsoeuer is cleare and lightsome in Scripture. Scripture opposeth these paires; *Grace* and *Nature*, *Grace* and *Merit*. As the *Pelagians* of old confounded nature and grace, teaching that wee were saued by grace: yet affirming that we are also saued by nature, and the naturall strength of free-will. Which they salued thus. To be saued by nature, is to bee saued by grace: for nature is of Gods grace and giuing. So these confound grace and merit, making a thing meritorious, because tis of grace. Faith merits because its Gods gracious gift. Nothing more contradictory. If it be his gift, how doth it merit, or of whom? of man it may, of God it cannot: vnlesse wee will senselessly affirme, that the gift deserues something of the giuer. That he that giues an hundred pound freely, is thereby bound to giue an hundred more. Had they said that faith is good, because of Gods giuing; that were true, and wee may grant them that God is honoured and pleased with his own gifts: but that every good thing merits, and that we can deserue of God by his owne gifts, is affirmed without all reason, or scriptures; and will neuer be proued by either.

But there is yet another shift.

2 Faith merits iustification [*Non de condigno*] not of the worthinesse

worthinesse of it: but [ *de Congruo* ] of the fitnessse: that is, God in iustice is not bound to bestow iustification where there is faith: but yet in fitnessse he ought to doe it. So that if he doe not iustifie him that beleeueth: hee is likely to omit a thing very fit and agreeable. This distinction is a meere imposture and collusion, *Bellarmino* in dealing with it seemes to haue a dogge by the eares, hee is loath to loose him: yet knowes not well how to hold him. If hee bee vrged where Scriptures make any the least intimation of such a distinction: he referres you to Divines, that is, Popish *Schoole-men*, who out of their owne imagination haue forged it, and in time made it authentick. But he sticks in the mire, when he is to shew what merit of *Condignity* and merit of *Congruity* is. Merits of condignity are workes, to which wages is due of iustice. What then are merits of congruity? Such workes whereto wages is not due by any iustice. As for example: he that labours the whole day in the Vineyard, merits a penny of condignity: because in iustice his labour is worth his hire. But he that for an houres worke, receaueth a penny, hee deserueth it of congruity: because though his labour bee not worth it, yet hee was promised a penny by him that set him on worke: Then which fond imagination nothing can bee more ridiculous, and contrary to common sense. For the merit of any worke is the proportionableness of its worth with the reward. Now in reason wherein ariseth this proportion of any worke with that reward? Stands it in the dignity of the worke it selfe; or in the compact made betweene him that worketh and him that rewardeth? It is apparent that the worke is deseruing or not-deseruing according to its owne nature, not according to a compact made. He that promiseth vnto one more for a little worke, then to another for a great deale in the same kinde: doth not by such a com-

compact

paſt make the little labour of the one more deſerving then the others great paines. We muſt looke to the worke, what it is in its owne nature: and as it is of ſome worth or no worth, ſo account it deſerving or not deſerving. Wherefore when in the diſtinction they make ſome merits of con- dignity or worthineſſe, ſome of congruity, or of fitteſſe without worthineſſe, they offend two waies, groſſly againſt two rules of reaſon. Firſt in oppoſing termes not oppoſite. Worthineſſe and fitteſſe: being the ſame, if you take them in regard of the worke. For that which deſerves a reward worthily, deſerves it fitly: (how elſe is it worthy of the re- ward, if the reward bee not fit for it?) and that which de- ſerves it fitly (if it deſerves) it deſerves it worthily.

2 In diſtinguiſhing vpon termes that doe not *conve- nire toti*. For worthineſſe agrees to merit only: but fitteſſe belongs to compact. So that in plainer Engliſh, the diſtin- ction runnes thus Merits or deſerts, are of two ſorts. Some, that are merits and doe deſerve becauſe they are worthy of a reward: others that are no merits and doe not deſerve be- cauſe they are not worthy of the reward, but only obtaine it, *ex Congruo*, in regard of compact and promiſe. For this rule is moſt certaine, *That a worke which deſerves nothing by its owne worthineſſe: can neuer deſerve any thing by compact or promiſe*. The *Ieſuits* are ſenſeleſſe in defending the contrary.

If (ſaith *Bellarmino*) a King promiſe a Begger 1000<sup>l</sup>. a yeare, vpon no condition, then indeed the Begger doth not deſerve it. But if vpon condition hee ſhall doe ſome ſmall matter, as that he ſhall come to the Court and fetch it, or bring a Poſie of flowres with him, now the Begger deſerves it: and he may come to the King, and tell him, he hath meri- ted his 1000<sup>l</sup> a yeare. Euery man, but a *Ieſuite*, would ſay twere extreame impudency in a Begger to make ſuch a de- mand,

maunde, so derogatorily to the Kings gracious bounty. Nor can it helpe them to say, that a promise bindes vnto performance, so that God should be vniust and vntrue, if he should not bestow the reward promised, although the workes bee not equall to the reward. For Gods iustice and truth in performing his promise, doe not imply our merit in performing the condition. Vvee doe not deserue by our well-doing; becaus: God is iust in his rewarding. And the reason is manifest; Because God in making the promise, respected meereley the freeness and bounty of his owne grace, not the worthiness of our workes. And therefore that obligation whereby he hath tyed himselfe to performance, is founded meereley in his owne truth: not a iot in our merit. Wherefore when they tell vs, that faith merits iustification [*de Congruo*] they intrap themselves in a grosse contradiction; seeing to deserue [*de Congruo*] is not to deserue at all; but only to receiue the reward by meere promise: God hauing promised to iustifie beleeuers. Thus much touching the first assertion, that Faith is the proper cause of *Iustification*, working it by its owne efficacy and merits.

## CHAP. II.

*The confutation of the Arminian error, shewing  
that faith doth not iustifie, sensu proprio,  
as it is an act of ours.*

**H**e second error about this point is of the *Arminians*, with whom also the Papists agree: Tis this.

2 That we are iustified by faith *sensu proprio*, that is, the act of beleeuing, in that *credere*, is imputed to vs for righteousness, being accepted of God and accounted  
E vnto



vnto vs for that whole righteoufnesse of the Law which we were bound to performe. So that our very Faith is that righteoufnesse, for which wee are iustified in the sight of God; *non quidem merito suo: sed propter gratuitam acceptationem Dei.*

The Authors of this opinion are *Faustus Socinus*, that vnhappy *Hereticke*, in his most blasphemous booke [ *de Christo servatore:* ] and *Michael Servetus* a Spaniard, in his second booke [ *de Lege & Evangelio* ] which errors are confuted by *Calvin* in his *Opuscula*. A stiffe defender of this opinion was *Christophorus Ostorodius* a Polonian, in his disputations *contra Georgium Tradelij*, who for this and other pestilent errors about the Article of mans redemption, was with his companion *Andreas Vaidonitus* banished the Low Countreyes where he had seated himselfe and published his opinions; *Arminius*, and his followers haue beene cheefe promoters of it. *Arminius* himselfe, as in other his opinions: so in the publishing of this vsed much closenesse & cunning conveyance. In his private disputations [ *Tit. de iustificatione* ] he seemes plainly to condemne it, saying that it is an abuse to say that *Fides est causa formalis Iustificationis*, and an error to affirme [ That Christ hath deserved, *ut fidei dignitate & merito iustificemur.* ] In his publique disputations he opens himselfe somewhat plainly: yet darkely enough [ *Thef. 19. de Iustificat. Thef. 7.* ] These are his words. [ *Fidei vero iustificatio tribuitur, non quod illa sit iustitia ipsa quæ rigido & severo Dei iudicio opponi possit; quanquam Deo grata: sed quod in iudicio misericordia triumphans supra iudicium absolutionem à peccatis obtineat & gratiose in iustitiam imputetur. Cuius rei causa est tum Deus iustus & misericors, tum Christus obedientia, oblatione & intercession sua secundum Deum in beneplacito & mandato ipsius* ]

Thef. 48. 2. 3.

*ipsum.*] Here saith it selfe is imputed for righteousness. But tis not in Gods seuerer iudgement, but in his iudgement of mercy. Faith in it selfe is not worthy: but yet Christ by his merits hath deserued that God will graciously accept of it. This opinion published was quickly contradicted: wherevpon *Arminius* makes knowne his minde in plainer termes, *In declaratione sententie ad ordines Holland, & Westfisie* he confesseth that in the forenamed *Thesis* his meaning was, that [*ipsa fides tanquam actus iuxta Evangelij mandatum* Pag 65. *præstitus imputatur coram Deo in, sine ad iustitiam, idq; in gratia, cum non sit ipsa met iustitia Legis.* And in his *Responsione ad 31. Artic. art. 4.* hee brancheth out his opinion in three distinct propositions.

- 1 *Iustitia Christi imputatur nobis.*
- 2 *Iustitia Christi imputatur in iustitiam.*
- 3 *Tò credere imputatur in iustitiam.*

The first of these Propositions, he grants: That Christs Righteousnesse is imputed to vs. The second hee denies, That Christs righteousness is imputed for righteousness. The third he grants, that the act of beleeuing is imputed for righteousness. Here bee mysteries in these Propositions, hereafter to be vnfolded. Wee now meddle with the last which yet is more roundly expressed by *Arminius* in his Epistle *ad Hyppolitum Leg. Princip. Pap.* [*Ipsum Fidei actum tò credere, dico imputari in iustitiam, idq; sensu propria non metonymicè*] The same is the opinion of his fellowes the Remonstrants, of *Vorstius*, of *Peter Bertius*, of *Episcopius* and the rest. With whom *Bellarmino* agrees pat [*Lib. 1. de Iust. cap. 17.* When vpon that *Rom. 4.* [*His faith is imputed for righteousness.*] he saith thus. *Vbi ipsa fides censetur esse iustitia, ac per hoc non apprehendit fides iustitiam Christi: sed ipsa fides in Christum est iustitia.* In summe,

*e Antibel. pap. 106.*  
*d Collat. cum Sib. Lubber.*  
*e The sib. de Justific.*  
*f Remonstrant. in Col. De phœst Art. 2. Antih. 2 (Statuimus Deum Fidem nostram nobis imputare per obedientiam: eamq; & nos in illa) acceptos habere.*

their opinion runnes thus. God in the legall couenant required the exact obedience of his commandment: but now in the couenant of grace, he requires faith, which in his gracious estimation stands in steed of that obedience to the morall law, which we ought to performe. Which comes to passe by the merit of Christ; for whose sake God accounts our imperfect faith to be perfect obedience. This assertion we reiect as erroneous, and in place thereof wee defend this *Proposition*. God doth not iustifie a man by faith properly, imputing vnto him faith in Christ for his perfect obedience to the Law, and therefore accounting him iust and innocent in his sight. Which we proue by these Reasons.

- I** We are not iustified by any worke of our owne. But beleeuing is an act of our own: Therefore by the act of beleeuing we are not iustified.

The Major is most manifest by the Scriptures, which teach that we are saued by grace, *Ephes. 2. 5.* [ *and therefore not by the workes of Righteousnesse which we had wrought.* ] *Tit. 3. 6.* [ *For if it bee of Workes, then were grace no more grace,* ] *Rom. 11. 6.*

The *Minor* is likewise evident. [ *That faith is a worke of ours.* ] For though *Ioh. 6. 29.* it bee said, [ *This is the worke of God that yee beleeue in him whom he hath sent* ] yet will not our aduersaries conclude thence, that Faith is Gods worke within vs, and not our worke by his helpe. For so should they runne into that absurdity which they would fasten vpon vs. (*viz.*) That when a man beleeues, tis not man beleeues: but God beleeues in him. To beleeue, though it be done by Gods aide: yet tis we that doe it; and the act is properly ours. And being so, we conclude, that by it we are not justified in Gods sight.

Here two exceptions may be made.

- I.** First

1 First that wee are not iustified by any worke of our owne (*viz.*) which we our selues doe by our owne strength without the helpe of grace : But yet we may be iustified by some worke which we doe (*viz.*) by the aide of grace; and such a worke is faith. We answer. This distinction of works done without grace and workes done by grace, was deuised by one that had neither wit nor grace; being a Tricke to elude the force of such Scriptures as exclude indefinitely all workes from our iustification, without distinguishing either of time when they are done, before or after; or of the ayde and helpe whereby they are done, whether by nature or by grace. Wherefore it is without all ground in *Scripture* thus to interpret these propositions: *A man* is not iustified by workes (that is) by workes done by the power of nature before and without grace. *A man* is justified by Grace (that is) by workes done by aide of grace. These interpretations are meere forged inventions of froward mindes, affirmed but not proued : as we shall more hereafter declare,

2 That we are not iustified by any workes of our own, (that is) by any workes of the Law : but by a worke of the Gospell such as faith is we may be iustified. *Male res agitur ubi opus est tot Remedijs* (saith *Erasmus* in another case.) It is a certaine signe of an vntrue opinion when it must bee bolstered vp with so many distinctions. Nor yet hath this distinction any ground in Scripture, or in reason: for both tell vs that the workes commanded in the Law, & workes commanded in the Gospell are one and the same for the substance of them, what worke can bee named, that is inioyned vs in the new Testament, which is not also commanded vs in that summary precept of the Morall Law, [*Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soule and with all thy strength, and with all thy minde, and thy*

*neighbour as thy selfe.*] *Luc. 10. 27, De. 6. 5.* What sin is there against the Gospell, that is not a transgression of the Law? If the Gospell command charity, is it any other then that which the Law commands: If the Gospell command faith, doth not the Law enioyne the same? you will say no. It doth not command faith in Christ. I answer, yea, it doth: For that which commands vs in generall to beleue what ever God shall propose vnto vs: commands vs also to beleue in Christ, as soone as God shall make knowne that tis his will we should beleue in him. The Gospell disc. uers vnto vs the Object; the Law commands vs the obedience of beleueing it. Wherefore Faith, for the substance of the Grace & workes done by vs, is a worke of the law; and so to be iustified by the action of beleueing, is to bee iustified by workes & by our owne righteou'snesse, contrary to the Scriptures; and that *Phil. 3. 9. (That I may be found not, &c.* This of the first Reason.

- 2      2      God accounts that only for perfect *Righteousnesse* of the Law, which is so indeed and truth.

But Faith is not the perfect fulfilling of the Law.

Therefore God doth not account it for such.

The Minor is granted by our aduersaries; that faith is not the exact iustice of the Law; such as can stand before the severity of Gods iudgements. The Major must bee proued: that God accounts not that for perfect iustice which is not perfect indeed. This appeares by that *Rom. 2. 2. [The iudgement of God is according to truth.]* Where therefore any thing is not truly good and perfect: there God esteemes it not so. Here also twill be excepted.

That God sometime iudgeth *Iudicio iustitie*, according to exact iustice; and then he iudgeth nothing perfectly iust, but that which hath true perfection of Iustice in it. Sometimes

times he iudgeth *iudicio misericordia*; according to mercy: and so he may esteeme a man perfectly righteous for that which is not perfect righteousness in it selfe; namely for his Faith.

Surely, this is a trimme distinction thus applyed, that sets Gods mercy and truth together by the eares. As who would say, when God iudgeth out of mercy: hee then doth not iudge according to truth. The Scriptures doe not acquaint vs with any such mercifull iudgement of God. This they doe acquaint vs with, that God iudgeth according to mercy, not when he doth pronounce and cleare a sinner to be perfectly righteous for that righteousness which is truly imperfect: but when he iudgeth a sinner to be righteous for that righteousness which is perfect; but is not his owne. In this iudgement there is both truth and mercy. Truth, in that he esteemes me perfectly righteous, for that righteousness sake which is euery way perfect: and mercy, that he accepteth for sinne, that righteousness which is performed for me by Christ my surety; but is not mine owne. Other mercifull iudgement of God besides this, we acknowledge none.

3 We are not iustified by two righteousnesses existing in two diuers subjects. But if we be iustified by the worke of faith: we shall be iustified partly by that righteousness which is in vs, (*viz.*) of faith: partly by the righteousness of Christ without vs.

*Ergo* we are not iustified by faith properly.

The minor is apparent. The righteousness of faith is inherent in vs, and by it we are iustified (say our aduersaries.) The righteousness of Christ is inherent in him: and by it are we iustified, say the Scriptures. [*Being now iustified by his blood, we shall be saued from wrath through him.*] Rom. 5. 9. & v. 19. [*By the obedience of one, many shall be made iust.*]

Wherefore

Wherefore either wee are properly iustified by both, or there is an error, and one part must stand out. We cannot be properly iustified by both, for our owne faith & Christs obedience too: for if we be perfectly iust in Gods sight for our owne faith, what need the imputation of *Christs* obedience to make vs iust? If for Christs righteousness we be perfectly iustified: how can God account vs perfectly iust for our faith? *Arminius* and his friends, seeing these things cannot stand together; haue (according to the good will which they beare toward the righteousness of Christ) kept in our faith, and thrust out Christs obedience, denying utterly that it is imputed vnto vs for righteousness. But my brethren, (which I hope make a better choice) seeing it cannot part with ours: let vs part with our owne righteousness, leaning wholly vpon the righteousness of Christ; and seeking for the comfort of our iustification in his perfect obedience, and not in our weak and imperfect faith. These reasons may suffice to shew the error of that assertion. Wee are iustified by faith *sensu proprio*, God accepting the act of beleeuing for the perfect obedience of the Law. And therefore that in those places, where 'tis said, [ *Faith is imputed for Righteousnesse*, ] the phrase is to bee expounded *metonymicke*, (that is) Christs righteousness beleued on by faith, is imputed to the beleuer for righteousness.

We are lauded  
by grace thorough  
faith.  
Ephes. 2. 8.

Whereas our adversaries say that Faith of its owne dignity and desert, doth not obtaine this fauour of God, to bee esteemed for the perfect righteousness of the morall Law: but this comes to passe only by the merits of Christ, who hath procured this grace vnto vs, that God should thus accept of our faith: we answer, that this is affirmed, but 'tis not proued. They speake a little more fauorably then the *Romanists*, who make faith of it selfe to merit iustification. these

these will haue it not to merit it; but to be graciously accepted for righteousness. But wee finde not in Scripture any such doctrine as this, [*Christ hath merited that wee should be iustified for our faith,*] or [*Christ hath merited for our faith, that faith should be esteemed by God for that perfect iustice of the Law; whereby wee are iustified in Gods sight.*] These things the Scriptures teach not: they teach, that Christ is our righteousness, and that wee are iustified by his blood and obedience. But that he hath merited by his obedience, that we should bee iustified by our owne obedience and righteousness, is a perverse assertion of men that loue to runne about the bush, and leauing the straight, to runne in crooked and froward waies. And it differs little from the like shift of the Disciples of *Rome*, who to maintaine merit of our workes and of *Christ* too, salue it with this trick, *Christ hath merited that we might merit.* But we acknowledge, as no other merit, but that of Christ; so no other righteousness to justification, but this alone. Thus much of the second assertion.

### CHAP. III.

*The confutation of Popish Doctrine, that other graces doe iustifie vs, and not faith alone.*



He third and last followes, wherein the controvertie is betweene vs and those of *Rome*; whose assertion is: that

3 A sinner is not iustified by faith alone, but also by other *vertues* and *graces*; as *Hope*, *Love*, *Repentance*, *Feare of God*, &c.

This we also reject as an error, contrary to the Scriptures whereby we are taught, that a man is justified by faith alone.

F

For



For opening the truth of which point: you must call to mind the different acceptation of the word *Iustifie*: wherein it is taken by vs, and by our adversaries. With them to *Iustifie* is all one, as to *Sanctifie*: of vniust and vnholly, to make inherently iust and holy. With vs to *Iustifie* is to absolue an offender, quitting him from blame and punishment. According to these different acceptations, this proposition [ a man is justified by faith alone ] hath a double meaning; one thus [ A man by faith alone is inherently sanctified ] another thus: [ A man by faith alone obtaines absolution in Gods iudgement, from all faultinesse and punishment. ] This latter meaning onely is true, and tis that only which is defended by vs of the reformed Churches; Namely, that faith onely is the grace of God whereby a sinner beleeuing the promise, and resting himselfe vpon the righteousness of Christ, receiues mercy from God in absolving him from the fault and punishment of all his transgressions: and is accounted righteous for Christs sake. Which gracious priuledge God hath annexed vnto faith, as vnto the condition of the New couenant, and not vnto Loue, Hope, Feare, Repentance, or any other grace, For not these, but faith onely, respecteth the promise of the Gospell. The former sense of that proposition, is false and absurde, *viz.* [ A man by faith alone is inherently sanctified ] nor doe any of the reformed Churches maintaine such a construction thereof. Wherefore when *Bellarmino* and his complices dispute eagerly against justification by faith alone, those arguments wherewith they suppose to smite through the truth of our assertion, are let flye at a wrong marke; being all aymed at this Butte, (*viz.*) to proue; that a man is sanctified by other inherent graces as well as faith. Which point we easily yeeld them, confessing that inherent righteousness, consists not of

one

one, but of the <sup>a</sup> manifold graces of Gods (spirit, wrought in <sup>a</sup> *πνεῦμα*  
 the heart of such as are regenerate. Neuerthelesse for the <sup>χρῆσις</sup>  
 shewing of some points which may be doubted of; Let vs <sup>1. Pet. 4. 10.</sup>  
 briefly take a view of the chiefe passages of *Bellarmines*  
 long discourse; which hee maintaines from the twelfth  
 chapter of his first booke *de Iustificatione*, to the end. For to  
 proue that a man is iustified not by faith alone. Of his Ar-  
 guments which are few, I shall name three onely, which are  
 materiall.

- 1 If other vertues iustifie as well as faith, then not faith *1 Arg. Bell.*  
 alone.

But other vertues doe iustifie, Therefore, &c.

The Minor he proues out of the Councell of *Trent*  
*Sess. 6. cap. 6.* where seauen preparatory graces to iusti-  
 fication, are reckoned vp.

1 Faith. 2 The Feare of God. 3 Hope in his mercy.

4 Loue of God, as the fountaine of iustice ( & *ad beneficia*

*Etoris*, faith *Bellarmine*) 5 Repentance, a sorrow and de-  
 testation of sinne. 6 A desire of receauing the Sacra-

ment of Baptisme. 7 A purpose to lead a new life, and  
 keepe Gods Commandements. All these ( faith *Bellar-*

*mine*) doe iustifie a man, *Preparatorie*; antecedenter,  
*dispositiue*. Faith, thats the root and beginning of our

iustification, the rest follow in order; all must goe be-  
 fore as needfull preparations: & iustification followes

as the effect of all in common, &c. *Ergo*, Not of Faith

alone. The <sup>b</sup> *Iesuite* goes ouer every particular, to  
 shew by Scriptures what force each of those graces

haue to iustifie. But tis not worth while to repeat his  
 proofes. Vnto the Argument, we answere two things.

- 1 That it is framed vpon the errour which puts out of  
 frame the whole dispute of our Adversaries, about this Ar-

ticle of *Iustification*; namely, that Regeneration and Sanctification is all one thing with justification; and that to iustifie a sinner is nothing but to doe away inherent corruption, by infusion of inherent righteousnesse. This wee haue heretofore by the Scriptures cleared to be false; and therefore this argument prouing our sanctification to bee wrought by other graces as well as by faith, toucheth not the point of Iustification in the remission of sinnes, which faith alone obtaineth through the promise.

2 Touching these graces which they make preparatory vnto justification, that is to sanctification: We answere, that tis a Philosophicall dreame of such as measure out the workes of Gods spirit in mans conuersion, according to *Aristotles Physicks*; and those disputes touching prauinous, or fore-going dispositions, that qualifie the matter for receauing of the forme. We acknowledge, that in mans regeneration all graces of the Spirit are not perfected at once. But as the ioints and sinewes in the body: so the graces of sanctification in the spirituall new birth, are at first weak & feeble: which in continuance of time gather more strength, according to our growth in Christ. But yet these are true for the substance: though imperfect in their degrees and measure. There is now true spirituall life in such a one which was before dead in sinne: although there be not the free and able exercise of all the vitall powers. Health there is, but not entire from all degrees of sicknesse, and every kinde of disease. Wherefore we affirme that these vertues, which are by our adversaries reckoned only as dispositions vnto regeneration, are, if they be true and not counterfeit mettall, the maine parts and fruits of regeneration.

Hence we beleue that these are foule errors (*viz.*) To teach that a man without grace by the power of his freewill  
may

may dispose himselfe to his regeneration, by beleeuing in Christ, feareing and louing of God, hoping of his mercy, repenting of his sinnes, resolving vpon amendment, and all this with true and sincere affection: **or** to teach if a man cannot doe these things of his owne meere strength and free will; yet by the *Speciall* aide of God inciting and helping him; he may doe them whilst he is viterly vn sanctified *in statu peccati*. That true faith, and feare, and hope, and loue, & repentance, and purpose of reformation, are vertues & graces in a man that is yet gracelesse and without vertue, because destitute of sanctification. That these graces consisting in the inward motion of the soule, and change of the affections, are wrought in man, not by any sanctifying grace of the *Holy Ghost*, inwardly touching the heart: but by some other kinde of vertue and aid (they knowe not what) <sup>a</sup> externall, <sup>a Lib. 1. cap. 27.</sup> exciting and helping forward the strength of nature. <sup>Nectamen est à Deo intus inhabitante, per gratiam iustificantem: sed extrinsecus adiuvante & excitante.</sup> All these are monstrous and mishapen imaginations, bred in proud hearts that would faine share the glory of their conversion, betweene Gods grace and their owne free will, and maintained by curious heads, whom Philosophicall speculations haue transported beyond the simplicity of diuine truth. The Scripture speakes otherwise of these graces, as of those that belong to such as are not in the way to bee made good, but are made so already. <sup>Et Cap. 13. pag. 311. H.</sup> [ *Ye are all the children of God by faith in Iesus Christ* ] faith the Apostle *Paul*, *Gal. 3. 28: whoſoeuer ſhall confeſſe that Ieſus is the ſonne of God: God dwelleth in him and he in God.* ] faith *Ioh. 1. Ioh. 4. 15. and Chap. 5. 1.* [ *Whoſoeuer beleueth that Ieſus is that Chriſt, is borne of God.* ] Doe we by true faith become the children of God, borne of him, in whom hee dwelleth and wee in him, when as yet in the meane time wee are yet vn sanctified, vn holy, vncleane, and not in the ſtate of grace? *Bellarmino* will: <sup>Feare.</sup>

proue that a man may haue faith ; yet not bee the child of God: out of *Iohn* 1 12. [ *As many as receaued him, to them he gaue power to become the sonnes of God: euen to them that beleue on his name.* ] See (saith hee) they that beleue are not yet, but haue power if they list, to become the sonnes of God, (*viz.*) by going on further from faith to hope & loue, and the rest of the *Tridentine* dispositions. For tis loue properly and not faith, that makes vs the sonnes of God; as hee would proue (contrary to that expresse place of the *Galat.*) out of the 1 *Ep.* of *Iohn*, where the Apostle hath much excellent matter, but nothing to that purpose. To the place of *Iohn*, we answere, that the *Iesuite* playeth with the ambiguity of the word *ἐξουία*, which is not here a liberty to doe what we list; as if we could at our pleasure become Gods adopted sonnes: but tis a right and priuiledge which *Christ* the naturall Son bestowes on true beleeuers, to be made Gods adopted sonnes, and so coheires with him of the heauenly inheritance. When is this priuiledge of adoption bestowed? Then when they beleue, and as soone as they beleue, before they be regenerate? No, Saint *Iohn* denies it. [ *He giues power to be the sonnes of God, euen to those that beleue in him.* ] Who be they? He answeres, *vers.* 15. [ *Which were borne not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.* ] Faith then is not a preparatiue to *Iustification*, but a part of it.

**Feare.**  
 b Pl. 111. 10.  
 Prov. 1. 7.  
 Faith is *Radix*:  
 a part of the  
 tree

And is not Feare of God too? No, saith *Bellarmino*. That is the <sup>b</sup> beginning of wisdom (that is) of perfect iustification. A bad interpretation, but a worse argument. Tis the beginning, therefore not a part. Nay; If the feare of God be the *Alpha* of Christian graces, certainly it selfe makes one letter of that *Alphabet*. Tis such a beginning of wisdom: as it selfe is wisdom too. Else God himselfe deceiues

ceiues vs: who, as it is, *Iob. 28. 28* [Said vnto man: Behold the feare of the Lord that is wisdom, and to depart from euill is understanding.] And therefore to take it in the *Iesuites* glosse, Feare of God is iustification as well as the beginning of it.

For hope; If it be true, (*viz.*) [That <sup>c</sup> which makes not ashamed,] which is the <sup>d</sup> Anchor of the soule, sure and stedfast, that entereth within the vaile. ] It would be knowne what difference the *Iesuite* will put betweene that Hope which is in a man before: and that which is in him after his sanctification. If he say, it differs only in degree: then he grants, tis the same in substance: whence we haue a faire position; that man sanctified and vn sanctified, is alike capable of the sauing Graces of Gods Spirit.

Hope.

• Rom. 5. 5.

• Heb. 6. 18.

The like we say for loue of God, if it be sincere and without dissimulation bred in the heart: Vpon those spirituall considerations not only of Gods mercy in Christ: but also of his iustice and infinite righteousnesse; (*For so the Trent Fathers will haue this loue to respect God, vt fontem Iustitie*) then we affirme this spirituall loue is not to be found but only in those Hearts, that are in some measure regenerate and made spirituall. In [whom <sup>c</sup> this loue of God is shed abroad by the Holy Ghost that is giuen to them.] as the <sup>a</sup> Apostle speaketh. This *Bellarmino* is soone forced to grant: yet he puts it off with a distinction [No man can loue God perfectly with all his heart, without the holy Ghost: but loue him he may imperfectly without the Holy Ghost dwelleth in him, though not without the speciall aid of God.] Whereto wee answere; tis one thing to loue God perfectly, and another to loue him truly. To loue him perfectly, is to loue him with all the heart, all the soule, all the minde, and all the strength: which we grant no man can doe without the Holy Ghost: but wee also

Loue.

• Rom. 5. 5.

• Rom 5. 5.

also affirme, that no man did or shall euer doe it in this life, so long as there is lustfull corruption in him causing any the least aversion of his soule from God in any motion thereof. So that if none haue the *Holy Ghost* abiding in them; but such in whom loue is thus perfected; he must be confined with the Saints in heauen, and not haue his dwelling with the faithfull on earth. But if imperfect Loue of God be also from the *Holy Ghost*, dwelling in the hearts of the Godly, who loue God truly in vnfeigned vprightnesse of heart; though in much imperfection by reason of sinne, which diuerts the heart vnto other pleasures: then it must be knowne of the Iesuiste, what he meanes by imperfect loue. Is it false loue such, as a meere natural man may conceaue vpon generall grounds: That God is good, the chiefest good, iust, holy, and full of all excellency? He will not say for shame, this is a true preparatiue vnto *Iustification*. Is it true loue, but in its degree imperfect, not so vigorous, so vehement, so hot as coales of *Iuniper*: yet such as hath some strength & warmth of spirituall affection? Then we require that these men will draw vs out a line by the rule of the Scriptures, and to tell vs how farre the true loue of God may come, without the grace of the *Holy Ghost* sanctifying the heart: But after 'tis past such a degree, then there is required the sanctifying grace of the *Holy Ghost* for it. T'will trouble their Mathematickes to describe vnto vs in what degree of perfection that Womans loue was situated, whose example they alleadge for a prooofe of this point out of *Luke 7.47*. [*Her sinnes which were many, are forgiven her, for she loued much.*] Can *Bel-larmine* tell vs how much this was? that so by that patterne we may knowe how farre men goe in the true loue of God before they be at all sanctified by inherent grace? For such wonders they would make vs beleue concerning this peni-

tent

tent sinner; that when her soule was full of faith and loue to Christ, her heart full of sorrow, her eyes full of teares for her sinnes; yet for all that shee was a gracelesse, vnholly person, whose *Loue*, and *Faith*, and *Sorrow*, came not from the sanctifying grace of the *Holy Ghost*, but only from free will helped with some kinde of externall aide of God.

Wee haue not Faith to beleeeue such mysteries as these. Nor yet in the last place can we conceiue how there should be true repentance with a sincere purpose of reformation & obedience, where the Heart is not changed and renued by the holy Ghost. That godly sorrow and hatred of sinne should spring out of a gracelesse heart, that so holy a resolution of amendment of life should bee in an vnholly person; be assertions so contradictory and jarring: that no Christian care can with patience endure to heare them. Wee conclude then touching these dispositions vnto Sanctification, that if these graces be true, they are parts & chiefe branches of inherent righteousness. But if they be false and counterfeit, they are not so much as preparations therevnto. So much of this first Argument: wherein yet one of these seuen dispositions first reckoned vp is omitted (*viz.*) a desire of receauing the Sacrament of Baptisme. (that is) A man thats baptised in his youth, afterward, before he be iustified, must haue a desire to be rebaptised. For what is it for one baptised to desire to receaue that Sacrament againe? This conceit is so absurd that howeuer *Bellarmino* reckon it vp among the other Dispositions; because of the authority of the Councell of *Trent*: yet *Becanus* giues it ouer in plaine field; numbring these fore-naming six graces only, chusing rather to venture the Councells credit, then his owne, by defending an vnreasonable position.

*Repentance.  
Reformation.*

*Not of Abab  
or Iudas.*

*2 Tom 2. Tract.  
4. c. 3. Quæst. 3.  
Bell. lib. 1. c. 14.*

2. *Argument.* If Faith alone doe iustifie vs; then it 2. *Arg.*

G

may



may doe it when other graces are absent; as well as when they are present. For seeing the vertue of justifying vs depends vpon Faith alone: and that in this act it receiues no aide from any other grace; It followeth that it needs not the company of any other grace: as in the law of sense. If the whole force of burning proceed onely from heat: then where heat is, though there be no other qualities, yet there will bee burning; yea if faith only haue force to iustifie, it will follow, that it may iustifie not only in the absence of other graces: but in the presence of the contrary vices. For as the absence of other graces doth not hinder: so the presence of other vices will not hinder faith one iota in its office of justifying.

But twere absurd to affirme, that Faith can iustifie without other vertues with other vices, *Ergo*,  
The force of justifying is not in faith alone.

To this we answer. That this sophisme is fashioned vpon the same blocke with the former, that to iustifie and sanctify are all one. In which sense we confesse the consequence is vnaavoidable. If faith alone by its owne vertue and force did sanctify: then it would effect this not only in the absence of other graces; but in the presence of their contrary corruptions: and the similitude which wee bring to illustrate our assertion, would confirme that of the aduersaries. Tis the eye only sees, say our men: yet the eare is in the head too. Yea, reply they, But the eye could see well notwithstanding the eare were deafe. Tis the <sup>a</sup> heat only of the fire or Sunne that warms, though there bee light ioyned with it. True say they, but if there were no light, yet if heat remained, it would warme for all that: as the heat of an Ouen, or of Hell, burnes, though it shine not. Thou holdest in thy hands

*ab. v. an. id.  
conc. Trid. Sess.  
6. cap. 11.*

hands many seeds (tis the old cōparison of *Luther* on the 15 of *Gen.*) I enquire not what tis together but what is the vertue of each one single. Yea, reply our aduerfaries; thats a very needlesse question indeed. For if among them many seeds there be some one that hath such soueraigne vertue; that it alone can cure all diseases, then tis no matter whether thou haue many or few, or none at all of any other sort in thy hand. Thou hast that which by its owne vertue without other ingredients will worke the Cure, nor haue we ought to make answeere in this case; if, as the eye sees, heat warmes, seeds and other simples doe cure by their owne proper vertue: so faith alone by its owne efficacy did sanctifie vs. But there is the Error. Faith workes not in our sanctification or iustification by any such inward power and vertue of its owne, from whence these effects should properly follow. For in sanctification faith, as we haue seene, is part of that inherent righteousness which the holy Ghost hath wrought in the regenerate: and tis opposed to the corruption of our nature which stands in Infidelity, Faith sanctifies not as a cause, but as a part of infused grace: and such a part as goes not alone, but accompanied with all other graces, as Loue, Feare, Zeale, Hope, Repentance, &c. Inasmuch as mans regeneration is not the infusion of one; but of the habit of all graces. Againe, 'tis not the Vertue of Faith that iustifies vs; the grace of iustification is from God, hee workes it: but tis our faith applies it and makes it ours. The act of justification is Gods meere worke; but our faith onely brings vs the benefit and assurance of it. Iustification is an externall privilege which God bestowes on beleeuers; hauing therein respect only to their faith, which grace onely hath peculiar respect to the righteousness of Christ & the promise in him. Whereby tis manifest that this argument is vaine. Faith a-

<sup>b</sup> Cap. 15. eius  
dem lib. 1.

lone is respected in our Iustification: therefore faith is or may be alone without other graces of *Iustification*. *Bellar-*  
<sup>b</sup> would undertake to proue that true faith may bee seuered from charity and other vertues: but wee haue heretofore spoken of that point: and shewed, that [true faith, yet without a forme:] [true faith, dead, and without a soule] be contradictions as vaine as [a true man without reason] [a true fire without heat.] We confesse indeed that the faith of *Iesuites* (the same with that of *Simon Magus*) may very well be without charity and all other sanctifying graces; a bare assent to the truth of Divine Revelations, because of Gods Authority. As tis in Diuels, so tis in Papists and other Hereticks. But wee deny that this is that which deserues the name of true faith: which whosoever hath, hee also hath eternall life. As it is, *Ioh. 6. 47.*

3. Arg.

3 *Argument.* That which Scripture doth not affirme, that is false doctrine.

But the Scripture doth not affirme that we are justified by faith alone. *Ergo*, so to teach, is to teach false Doctrine.

*Bell. l. 1. s. 16.*

This Argument toucheth the quicke: and if the Minor can be proued, we must needs yeeld them the cause. For that the *Iesuites* conceaue that this is a plaine case: for where is there any one place in all the Bible, that saith, *Faith* alone justifies? They euen laugh at the simplicity of the Hereticks (as they *Christen* vs) that glory they haue found out at last the word (*Only*) in *Luc. 8. 50.* in that speech of Christ, to the Ruler of the Synagogue, [*Fear*, not, *believe only*, and *hee shall be made whole.*]

And much sport they make themselves with *Luther*: that to helpe out this matter at a dead lift, by plaine fraud he foisted into the Text, in the 3. to the *Romans*, the word (*Only*)

(*Onely.*) When being caught with the fact, and required a reason: he made answer according to his modesty, (*Sic volo, sic iubeo, stat pro ratione voluntas.*) Tis true that *Luther* in his translation of the Bible into the *Germane* tongue: [Allein durch den glauben] read the 28. verse of the Chapter, thus (*We conclude that men are iustified without the workes of the Law: onely through faith*) Which word only is not in the originall. Where in so doing, if he fulfill'd not the office of a faithfull Translator: yet hee did the part of a faithfull Paraphrast, keeping the sense exactly in that alteration of words. And if hee be not free from blame: yet of all men the *Iesuites* are most unfit to reprove him, whose dealing in the corrupting of all sort of writers, Divine and Humane, are long since notorious and infamous throughout *Christendome*.

What *Luthers* modesty was in answering those that found fault with his Translation: we haue not to say. Onely thus much, that the impudent forgeries of this generation, witnesse abundantly: that it is no rare thing for a Lyet to drop out of a *Iesuites* or *Friers* penne. But be it, as it may be; Tis not *Luthers Translation*; not that place in the 8. of *Luke*, that our doctrine, [touching justification by Faith alone] is founded vpon. We haue better proofes then these: as shall appeare vnto you in the confirmation of the Minor of this Syllogisme.

*Bell. quotes Lutheri Resp. ad duos Art. ad amicum quendam.*

Whatsoever the Scriptures affirme, that's true doctrine. But the Scriptures affirme, a man is justified by Faith alone.

Therefore thus to teach, is to teach according to the word of wholesome doctrine.

Our Adversaries demande proofe of the Minor. Wee alledge all those places wherein the Scriptures witnesse: that we are justified by faith, without the workes of the Law.

They say then Workes are of two sorts.

- 1 Some goe before grace and faith, and are performed by the only strength of free-will : out of that knowledge of the Law, wherevnto men may attaine by the light of nature, or the bare Revelation of the Scriptures. These workes or this obedience vnto the Law, which a meer naturall man can performe, is (say they) that *Righteousnesse* which the Scripture calls our own. By this kinde of *Righteousnesse* and *Workes*, they grant none is justified.
- 2 Some follow grace and faith : which are done by Mans freewill, excited and aided by the speciall helpe of Grace. Such obedience and righteousness is (say they) called the (*Righteousnesse of God,*) because it is wrought in vs of his gift and grace. And by this righteousness a man is justified.

By this inuention they turne of with a wet finger, all those Scriptures that we haue alleaged. Wee are iustified. [*not by the workes of the Law*] that is, by the obedience of the morall law, which a man may performe without Gods Grace: But we are iustified by (*Faith of Christ*) that is, by that obedience of the morall Law, which a man may performe by faith, and the helpe of Gods grace. <sup>b</sup> Boasting is excluded, saith the Apostle, by what law? By the Law of workes, that is, by the law performed by the strength of nature? Nay, for hee that performes the Law by his owne strength, hath cause to boast of it. By what Law then? By the Law of Faith, that is, by faith which obtaines Gods grace to fulfill the morall Law. Now hee that obeyes the Law by Gods helpe, hath no cause to boast. [<sup>c</sup> *Israell which followed the law of righteousness, could not attaine vnto the law of righteousness.*] Wherefore? Because they sought it.

not

<sup>b</sup> Rom. 3. 27.

<sup>c</sup> Rom. 9. 31.

32.

How knowes  
Bellarmine  
that? Bell. lib.

2. 19.

not by faith; that is, they sought not to performe the Law by Gods grace; (*But as by the workes of the law,*) that is, by their own strength: Thus *Paul* desiresto be found in *Christ*, (*not hauing his owne righteousnesse which is of the Law*) that is that righteousnes he performed without Gods grace before his *Conversion*; But (*the righteousnesse of God which is by faith.*) i.e. That righteousnesse which hee performed in obeying the Law by Gods grace after his *Conversion*. For confirmation of this distinction, and the interpretations thereon grounded, *Bellarmino* brings three reasons to shew that when workes and faith are opposed: all workes of the Law are not excluded.

- 1 Its manifest; Faith is a worke: and that there is a Law of Faith as well as workes. If therefore; *Rom. 3.* all workes, and all Law be excluded from Iustification: then to be iustified by faith, were to bee iustified without faith.
- 2 Its plaine the Apostle, *Rom. 3.* intends to proue that neither the *Iewes* by the <sup>a</sup> naked obseruation of the Law of *Moses*: nor the *Gentiles* for their good workes before they were <sup>b</sup> conuerted to the faith of *Christ*, could obtaine righteousnesse from God. <sup>a</sup> *Beil. lib. 1. c. 19.*  
<sup>b</sup> *Beil. Tom. 2. tract. 4. cap. 2. quest. 6. §. 15.*
- 3 The Apostle shewes *Rom. 4. 4.* what workes hee excludes from Iustification, (*viz.*) such whereto wages is due, by debt not by grace. Now workes performed without Gods helpe deserue <sup>c</sup> reward (*ex Debito*): <sup>c</sup> *Beil. cap. 19.* but workes performed by his helpe, deserue wages (*ex gratia*)

I doubt not but (notwithstanding these seeming reasons) the fore-named distinction and expositions of Scripture according thereto; appeare vnto you at the first sight, strange, vncouth, farre besides the intent of the *Holy Ghost*, in all those

fore-reckoned passages of Scripture. Let vs examine it a little more narrowly: and yee shall quickly perceiue; that in this *Schoole distinction*, there is nothing but fraud and shifting. (By workes done, by the strength of nature we are not iustified. By workes done with the helpe of grace wee are iustified.) This is the distinction: resoluē it now into these termes which are more proper, and it runns thus. (A man is not sanctified by those workes of the Morall Law which he doth without grace: but a man is sanctified by those workes of the Morall Law hee doth by grace) Both Sentences are squint eyed, and Looke quite awry from the Apostles ayme in this dispute touching Iustification. Is it his inte it, *Rom. 3.* to proue that a sinner destitute of grace cannot bee made inherently holy by Morality, or outward workes of Piety? or thus. That a sinner cannot attaine to Sanctification by his owne strength: but hee must attaine to it by the grace of God? Take a suruey of the Chapter, and follow the Apostles Argumentation. All both *Iewes* and *Gentiles* are vnder sinne, *verse 9.* therefore (*euery mouth must be stopped*) and none can pleade innocency; (*and all the world must be guilty before God.*) & so liable to condemnation, *v. 19* What followeth hence now? (*Therefore by the workes of the Law, shall no flesh be iustified in his sight. v. 20.*

How strange were this conclusion, taken in our aduersaries construction. *Ergo*, By obedience vnto the Morall Law done without grace no flesh can attaine sanctificatiō, in his sight. For neither doth the Apostle speake of sanctificatiō, but of absolūtion as is apparant; All are sinners against the Law, *Ergo*, by pleading innocency in the keeping of the Law, no man can be wholly sanctified, nor iustified, nor absolued from Blame in Gods sight. Nor yer will the reason immediatly annexed admit the glosse [*workes without Grace*] By the  
*workes*

workes of the law shall no flesh be iustified in his sight. Why [*For by the law cometh the knowledge of sinne*] that is, By the Law men are convinced of sinne, and declared not to be innocent. Which reason is not worth a Rush, according to our aduersaries construction. Hee that without grace shall doe the workes of the law: hee is not thereby made holy. Why? Because by the law is the knowledge of sinne. The law thus obserued tells him hee is a sinner. In which reason there is no force, vnlesse it bee true on the other side. Hee that by the helpe of grace doth the workes of the law, is thereby sanctified: because the law thus kept tells him hee is not a sinner, which is most vntrue. In as much, as not only those which are destitute of grace; but those that haue grace also, and by the helpe thereof, keepe the Law in some measure, are by the Law notwithstanding convinced to bee sinners. The Apostle yet goes forward. (*If wee be not iustified by the workes of the law, by what then?* Hee answers, (*verse 21*) *But now is the righteousness of God made manifest without the law*) We are iustified by the righteousness of God: But what is that? It is (saith the distinction) that obedience to the law which wee performe by Gods grace. A glosse apparantly false. For the righteousness of God here is a righteousness without the law: But obedience to the law: though performed with grace, is a righteousness (*with*) the Law; because tis the righteousness of the Law. For 'tis all one, hee that obeyes the Law by his owne strength: if he doe it perfectly hee hath the righteousness of the law, and he that obeyeth it perfectly, by Gods grace, hath still the same righteousness of the law, and no other. For so the law be kept, it alters not the righteousness thereof, that wee keepe it by our owne strength, that we haue of our selues, or anothers helpe that giues vs strength to doe it.



a So Bellarmine  
cap. 19. answer-  
ing that  
place, Gal 2.  
(If righteous-  
ness be by the  
Law, then  
Christ dyed in  
vaine) saith:  
Nay, seeing  
we are iusti-  
fied by faith:  
and workes  
following it,  
Christ died to  
purpose, that  
God might  
giue vs grace  
so to be iusti-  
fied.  
Workes with-  
out grace doe  
not iustifie.  
Why? becaule  
imperfect, or  
becaule done  
by natures  
strength. Not  
the liter: For  
then Adam  
was not iusti-  
fied. Nor the  
former for so  
all good  
workes of the  
best are im-  
perfect.

For then that strength which hee giues vs is our owne. Which point duely obserued cuts in sunder the sinewes of this distinction; for tis cleare the Apostle distinguisheth the Righteousnesse of the Law and of God as different in their kindes: these make them to be one & the same thing, [Obedience to the morall law] but done by diuers helps; one by meere nature: the other by grace. This is most contrary to the scriptures, and specially to that excellent place *Rom. 10. 3-4.* &c. where the Apostle shewing the difference betweene the righteousness which is our owne or of the Law; and that which is the righteousness of God or faith: tells vs. The righteousness of the law is thus described [The man that doth these things shall liue thereby:] but the righteousness of Faith speaketh on this wise [whofoener beleeueth on him (i. e. Christ) shall not bee ashamed.] Can any thing bee more plaine; then that the Apostle opposeth here [Doing of the law; & [Beleeuening] in Christ: Not [doing] the law by our owne strength, and doing of the Law by [Gods grace.] These are *Iesuiticall* glosses that corrupt *Apostolicall* Doctrine, and strangely peruert the worke of Christ in our redemption, as if hee had done no more for vs but this<sup>h</sup> (*viz*) procured that whereas wee could not liue by doing of the law through our owne strength: God will now aide vs by his grace, that wee may fulfill the Law, and by that legall Righteousnesse obtaine *Iustification* and remission of sinnes. Wee abhorre such Doctrine, and doe reiect as vaine and imaginary that distinction whence such absurdities necessarily follow;<sup>b</sup> more<sup>c</sup> might be said in confutation thereof, were it needfull: but wee haue dwelt long vpon this point, and tis time to hasten forward. By the way vn-to the Iesuites arguments in the defence of this distinction wee answered.

¶ Wee

1 Wee confesse faith is a worke, and in doeing of it wee obey the Law, because (as Saint *John* speaks) *John. 3. 23.* [*This is Gods commandment, that wee beleue in the name of his sonne Iesus Christ,*] And therefore the Gospell is called [*The law of Faith.*] because the promise of grace in *Christ* is propounded with commandment that men beleue it. But now wee deny that *Faith* iustifies vs, as 'tis a worke which wee performe in obedience to this law: It iustifieth vs onely as the condition required of vs; and an instrument of embracing *Christs Righteousnesse*. Nor can the contrary be proved.

2 The Iesuites are mistaken in the scope of the Apostle *Rom. 3.* whose intent is not to shew the *Jew or gentile* could not attaine sanctification without Gods grace, by such obedience to the Law; as they could performe through the meere strength of naturall abilities. They affirme it strongly; but their proofes are weake, being manifestly confuted by the whole File of the Apostles disputation, who clearly and plainly excludes both Iewes and Gentiles, from being iustified by the workes of the Law without making mention or giueing the least intimation, by what meanes these workes must be performed, whether without grace or by the helpe of grace. Yea it had beene quite besides his purpose so to haue done. For the Apostles argument is cleare as the light; and strong as a threefold cord. All are sinners against the Law, therefore by obedience vnto the Law, (Let men performe which way they list or can, without grace or with grace) no man is in Gods sight pronounced innocent.

3 To the last argument out of *Rom. 4. 4.* wee answere, The Apostle there proues; that the Faithfull, children of *Abraham*; are not iustified by workes. Because *Abraham*

the Father of the Faithfull was iustified by faith, and not by workes. Where wee affirme; That the Apostle excludeth all the workes of *Abraham* from his iustification: both such as he performed when he had no grace, and those hee did when he had grace. For those workes are excluded wherein *Abraham* might glory before men. Now *Abraham* might glory before Men as well in those workes which hee did by the helpe of Gods grace: as those which he did without it. Nay more in those: then in these. As in his obedient departure from his owne Country at Gods command; his patient expectation of the promises; his ready willingnesse euen to offer his owne sonne out of Loue & Duty to God, his religious and iust demeaning of himselfe in all places of his abode. In those things *Abraham* had cause to glory before men, much more, then in such workes as hee performed before his conuersion: when he serued other Gods beyond the Flood. Therefore wee conclude that *Abraham* was iustified; neither by such workes; as went before faith and grace in him: nor yet by such as followed after. This is most cleare by the 2. v. [*If Abraham were iustified by workes, he had wherein to glory: but not with God.*] Admit here the Popish interpretation: and this speech of the Apostles will be false. Thus [*If Abraham were iustified by workes*] that is by such workes as hee performed without Gods gracious helpe [*he hath wherein to glory*] viz. before men: but [*not with God.*] Nay, thats quite otherwise. For its euident. If a man be iustified by obeying the law through his owne strength, he may boldly glory before God, as well as before men; seeing in that case he is not beholding to God for his helpe. But according to our doctrine, the meaning of the Apostle is perspicuous. *Abraham* might glory before men in those excellent workes of piety, which hee performed

formed after his *vocation*: and in mens sight he might bee iustified by them. But hee could not glory in them before God: nor yet be iustified by them in his sight. So then all workes whatsoeuer are excluded from *Abrahams iustification*: and nothing left but faith, which is imputed vnto him for righteousness; as it is *v. 3.* Whence it followes, That as *Abraham*: so all others are iustified without all merit, by Gods free grace and fauour. For so it followes, *verse 4. 5.* [*Now vnto him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour; but by debt: but to him that worketh not; but beleueth in him that iustifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for Righteousnesse.*] These words runne cleare, till a Iesuite put his foot into the streame to raise vp the mudd. [*To him that worketh*] that is, which fulfilleth the righteousness of the Morrall Law [*the wages*] of iustification and Life [*is not counted by fauour: but by debt*] for by the perfect righteousness of the Law; a Man deserues to be iustified and faued. [*But to him that worketh not*] that hath not fulfilled the righteousness of the Law in doing all things; that are written therein: [*But beleueth in him that iustifieth the vngodly*] That is relyeth vpon Christ, who by his righteousness obtained absolution for him (that is) Righteousnesse in himselfe. [*His faith is imputed for righteousness*] that is. He by his faith obtaines iustification in Gods sight: not by merit of his owne, but Gods gracious acceptance of *Christs righteousness* for his.

But here our aduerfaries trouble the water by a false interpretation. [*To him that worketh*] that is, say they that fulfill the law by his owne strength. *Wages is not counted by fauour, but by debt,*] but if he fulfill it by Gods grace, his wages is paid him by fauour, not of debt. Wherevnto wee reply: That this glosse is a plaine corruption of the Text.

For

For by workes in this fourth *verse* the Apostle vnderstands that kinde of workes whereof mention is made *verse* 2. By which *Abraham* was not iustified: and these as wee haue shewed were workes done by the helpe of grace not by the meere strength of nature. 2 And againe for the assertion it selfe, namely [*He that fulfills the morrall Law by the helpe of Gods graces is iustified, by fauour not by debt*] we say 'tis either a manifest falshood or at best, an ambiguous speech. For 'tis one thing to bestow grace on a man to fulfill the Law: and 'tis another thing to iustifie him; when hee hath fulfilled the Law. If God should giue strength to a man exactly to fulfill the morrall Law that were indeed of his free fauour and grace: but when this man, that hath receiued this strength shall come before God with the perfect righteousness of the Law, pleading that in every point hee had done what was required, God is bound in iustice to pronounce him innocent, and of due debt to bestow on him the wages of eternall life. *Adams* case is not vnlike to such a man. For God gaue *Adam* what strength hee had: yet *Adam* fulfilling the Law by that strength, should haue merited Iustification and life. Therefore when the Apostle speaketh of all workes in the perfect fulfilling of the Law, he saith, that [*to him that worketh wages is not counted by fauour: but by debt:*] he speaketh exactly, and the *Iesuits* in excluding workes done by grace comment absurdly. Thus much touching the third point concerning mans iustification by faith alone, as also of the first generall head promised in the beginning. Namely, the condition required of vs vnto iustification (*visz.*) *Faith*.

SECT. 3.

## SECT. 3. CHAP. I.

*Of the righteousness whereby a man is iustified before  
God: that it is not his owne inherent in himselfe:  
that in this life no man hath perfection of  
holinesse inherent in him.*



Proceed vnto the second Generall, of the matter Sect. 3. c. 1.  
of our *Iustification* where wee are to enquire  
what righteousness it is, for which a sinner is iu-  
stified in Gods sight. Iustification and iustice are  
still coupled together; and some righteousness there must  
be, for which God pronounceth a man righteous: and for  
the sake whereof he forgiveth vnto him all his sinnes. Nor is  
a sinner iust before God because iustified: but he is therefore  
iustified because he is some way or other iust. The righte- 2 General  
ousnesse for which a man can bee iustified before God is of heads.  
necessity one of these two.

1 Either inherent in his owne person and done by 1  
himselfe.

2 Or inherent in the person of Christ: but imputed vn- 2  
to him.

A man is iustified either by something in him and per-  
formed by him: or by something in another performed for  
him. The wisdom of Angells and men hath not beene able  
to shew vnto vs any third meanes. For whereas it is affirmed  
by some that God might have reconciled man kinde vnto  
himselfe by a free and absolute pardon of their sinnes with-  
out the intervention of any such righteousness, either in  
themselves or in *Christ*, whereby to procure it: to that wee  
say that God hath seene it good in this matter rather to fol-  
low his owne most wise counsailes; then these mens foolish  
directions. Tis to no purpose now to dispute what God  
I might

↳ Lubbertus de  
Christo servat.  
lib. 1. cap. 1.

Psal. 55.  
Heb.

might haue done, whether God by his absolute omnipotency could not haue freed men from Hell, by some other meanes without taking *satisfaction* for sinne from Christ: whether God ought not to haue the same priuiledge which we giue vnto any mortall king, freely to pardon a Rebell, & receaue him to fauour, without consideration of any goodnesse in him, or satisfaction made by him, or another for him? Or whether sinne doe make such a deepe wound in Gods iustice and honour, that hee cannot with the safegard of either passe by it without amends. Such questions as these are vaine and curious prosecuted by idle and vnthankfull men, who not acknowledging the riches of Gods wisdom and grace in that course of their redemption which God hath followed; would accuse God of indiscretion, for making much adoe about nothing, and teach him to haue gone a more compendious way to worke, then by sending his owne sonne to die for vs. These Criticismes vpon Gods glorious & wonderfull proceeding in mans redemption, we leaue vnto *Socinus* and *Arminius* with their followers, it is our part *sapere ad sobrietatem*, and to vnderstand what God hath; not tell him what he might or should haue done. According to which course of his now revealed will, we knowe that God hath declared his everlasting hatred against sinne: as that thing which most directly and immediately opposeth the holinesse of his nature, and the iustice of his Commandements. Wee knowe that for this hatred which God beareth to sinne, no sinfull creature can be able to stand in his sight, without being consumed vp with the fire of his fierce wrath. And therefore before reconciliation it was needfull, *satisfaction* should be made: where offence had beene giuen. Which seeing man could not effect by himselfe, God thought it good to provide a Mediator, who should

should make peace betweene both. So that what ever may be imagined of possibility of other meanes to bring man to life: yet now we knowe that *sic oportuit*. Thus Christ ought to suffer, *Luc. 24. 26.* and that it [Behoued him to bee like vs, that being a faithfull high Priest, he might make reconciliation for our Sinnes. ] *Heb. 2. 17.* Leauing then this new way to heauen neuer frequented, but by imagination; let vs follow the old waies of *Iustification* that the Scriptures haue discovered vnto vs: which are two and no more. Either by our owne *Righteousnesse* and *Workes*: or by the *Righteousnesse* and *Workes* of another (*viz.*) *Christ*. The former is that way whereby man might haue obtained *Iustification* and life, had he not beene a sinner. But now, man, that is a sinner, cannot be *Iustified* and *saued*: but onely in the latter way (*viz.*) by the *righteousnesse* of *Christ* the *Mediator*.

This Divine truth is of most infallible certainty and soueraigne consolation vnto the conscience of a sinner, as shall appeare in the proceffe of our discourse, wherein wee shall first remoue [our owne *righteousnesse*,] that so in the second place we may [establish the *righteousnesse* of *Christ*] as the only matter of our justification in Gods sight.

By our owne *righteousnesse* wee vnderstand as the Apostle doth, *Rom. 10.* [the *righteousnesse* of the law or of works] which is twofold.

1 The fulfilling of the Law whether by the [Habitual holiness] of the heart: or by the [Actual Iustice] of good workes proceeding thence. For the law requires both, that the person be *Holy*, endued with all inward qualities of [Purity and Iustice] and that the workes be *Holy* being performed for matter and all the *Circumstances* according to the *Commandement*.

2 The satisfying for the Breach of the Law. For he that makes



makes full *satisfaction* to the law, which is broken, is afterward no debter to the Law: but to be accounted *Iust* and no *Violater* thereof. Wee must now enquire touching these two: whether a man can be iustified by his owne obedience to the *Morall Law*. Secondly, whether he can be iustified by his owne *Satisfaction* for *Transgression* of the *morall law*. Concerning which two *Queres*: wee lay downe these two Conclusions which are to be made good.

1      1    *No man that is a sinner is iustified by his owne obedience to the morall law.*

2      2    *No man is iustified by his owne satisfaction for his Transgression.*

1 *Conclusio*    For the former. It is the conclusion of the Apostle, *Rom.* 3.20. Therefore by the workes of the Law shall no flesh be *iustified in his sight*] which we proue by these Arguments.

1. *Arg.*        The first shall bee that of the Apostle in the forenamed place which stands thus.

*whosoever is a transgressor of the morall law: he cannot be iustified by his obedience thereto.*

*But every man is a transgressor of the morall law. Ergo No man can be iustified by his obedience thereto.*

The *Maior* is an undeniable *Principle* in reason. It being a thing impossible that a party accused as an offender should be absolved and pronounced innocent by pleading Obedience to that *Law* which he hath plainly disobeyed. Wherefore the Apostle takes this *Proposition* for granted in these words of his [ *For by the law commeth the knowledge of Sinne* ] v.20. That which convinceth vs to bee sinners: by that tis impossible we should be declared to bee righteous. That *Plea* will neuer quit vs; which proues vs guilty. Yea were not only folly, but madnesse to alleadge that for ones *iust excuse* which it selfe is his very fault whereof he is accused.

sed. The *Major* then is certaine.

The *Minor* is no lesse. (*viz.*) *That every man is a transgressor of the morall law* ) If any sonne of *Adam* will deny this, his owne conscience will giue his tongue the lye: and the Scriptures will double it vpon him. Which hauing concluded [<sup>a</sup> all vnder sinne] auerre. That [<sup>b</sup> If we, an Apostle not accepted ) say we haue no sinne we deceiue our selues and the truth is not in vs ] Yea [<sup>c</sup> If we say we haue not sinned; we make God a lier, and his word is not in vs. ] The conclusion then is infallible [ *That by the obedience of the Morall law, no man shall be iustified* (that is) *quitted and pronounced innocent before Gods iudgement seat.* ] This Apostolicall argument vtterly overthrowes the pride of man in seeking for *Iustification* by the law: and it is offo cleere euidence; that the Adversaries of this doctrine cannot tell how to auoid it. But, forasmuch as many exceptions are taken, and shifis fought out, for the further manifestation of the force hereof against gaine-layers of the truth: it wil be requisite to examine their euasions. Which wee shall doe in the next argument. Which is this.

2 *Whosoever hauing once broken the Law, can never after perfectly fulfill it: hee cannot bee iustified by his obedience thereto.* 2. *Argument*

*But man hauing once broken Gods Law can neuer after that perfectly fulfill it. Ergo, man cannot be iustified by his obedience of the Law.*

The *Major* of this argument is framed vpon no other ground then the former, and opposed vnto that erroneous tenent of our Adversaries. [ *That howsoeuer a man be a sinner against the law, yet neuerthelesse afterward he may be iustified by his obedience of the Law. Because God for the tyme following gines him grace perfectly to fulfill it.* ] Which opinion

<sup>a</sup> Rom. 3. 9.  
<sup>b</sup> Gal. 3. 22.  
<sup>c</sup> 1. Ioh. 1. 8.  
<sup>e</sup> Ver. 10.

nion is directly contrary to the reason of the Apostle which is: *That once a sinner, and alwaies incapable of Iustification by the Law: for how should the law declare him innocent that hath, though but once transgressed against it.*] He that hath stollen in his youth, and euer after liued truely and iustly, can neuer quit himselfe in iudgement from the guilt and punishment of theeuery by pleading, hee hath kept the law in his latter times. Obedience that followes after, iustifies not from the guilt that went before. As wee shall see more hereafter in the point of mans *satisfaction*. But let vs grant that the law though once broken, yet afterwards fulfilled would iustifie a man: we here defend the *Minor* [*That man hauing broken Gods law, can neuer afterwards perfectly fulfill it*] and so by that meanes also he is excluded from justification by it. This *Proposition* the *Romanists* will not yeeld to, without strong proofe: Let vs explaine it and confirme it. The *Proposition* may bee set downe in these termes [*No man whofoeuer can perfectly fulfill the morall law in this life*] Man here we consider in a twofold estate, 1 of Nature, 2 of Grace. Touching man in the estate of nature, it is agreed on both sides that the keeping of the law is vtterly and *absolutely impossible* vnto him. But concerning man regenerate and iustified, they of *Rome*, affirme he may keepe the law: we of the reformation granting that *absolutely* it is not *impossible* (for we will not say, but God might if he saw good, bestow such perfection of grace vpon a regenerate man, that afterwards he should liue without all Sinne, and be translated to heauen without death) yet, according to the order which God now holdeth in bringing Man to salvation; wee deny that there ever was or ever will bee any mortall man that hath or shall perfectly fulfill the righteousnesse of the morall law: This shall appeare vnto you, by parting the righteousnesse

nesse of the Law into its branches, whereby you may see what it is to fulfill the law, & how impossible it is so to doe.

The Righteousnesse required by the morall law is of two sorts.

1 *Habitual*, in the inherent holinesse of mans whole person, when such gracious qualities are fixed and planted in every faculty of soule and body: as doe dispose and incline the motions of both onely vnto that which is conformable to the righteousness of the law. That such righteousness is required by the law, is a plaine case and confessed; that which commands the good, or forbids the euill action, doth command the vertuous and forbid the vicious habit too. He that looks for purity in the streame, cannot but dislike poison in the fountaine: and God that commands vs to doe good, bids vs also to be holy; nor can wee doe the one, vnlesse we doe the other. And therefore the Apostle ioines both together. [*The end of the Commandment is loue, (but where?) out of a pure heart*] 1. Tim. 1. 5.

Pure in heart  
vndefiled in  
the way.

2 *Actuall*, In the exercise of all good works enioyned by the Law, and forbearing the contrary euill workes. Whether these good or euill workes bee *inward* in that *spirituall obedience* which the law requires, (*viz.*) in the right ordering of all the motions of our soules, that every one of our *Thoughts, Imaginations, purposes* of our minde, and all the *secreet workings* and *stirrings* of our *affections*, bee altogether imploied vpon *Piety* and *Charity*, not so much as touching vpon any thing that is contrary to the loue of God, or our neighbour. Or, whether these good and euill workes be *outward* in the *bodily obedience* vnto the Law, in doing all and every externall duty of religion towards God: of *Iustice* and *Mercy* towards man; and in leauing vndone the contrary.

Further

Further this *act*all Righteousnesse of the Law is to be considered two waies:

1 As it respects all the Commandements, and so that righteousness is onely perfect, which fulfillis all and every particular precept of the Law.

2 As it respects any one Commandement, or any one duty therein contained. And so we may call that righteousness perfect, which exactly performes any one point of the Law, though it faile in others.

So you see what is to be done of him that will perfectly fulfill the law: let vs now see whether any man can doe so, or no. We say no man can doe it; and we make it good in the confirmation of these three Propositions.

1 *No man in this life hath perfection of grace and holinesse inherent.*

2 *No man in this life can fully obserue all those good workes both inward and outward which the Law requires.*

3 *No man in this life can performe any one particular good worke so exactly, that in every point it shall answer the rigor of the Law, and Gods severe iudgment.*

For the first we proue it by this argument.

1 *Proposit.* *where sinfull corruption remaines in part, there inheres holinesse is not perfect.*

*But in every man during this life there remaineth sinfull corruption. Ergo, In no man is there during this life perfect inherent holinesse.*

The *Major* is without exception. For hee that is in part bad and sinfull, tis not possible, he should be totally good & holy.

The *minor* is most euident by Scripture and each mans experience and reason it selfe. *Gall. 5.17.* The Apostle describes

cribes the combat that is betweene the flesh and the spirit, (that is) betweene corruption and grace, in a man regenerate. [*The flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh: and these two are contrary one to the other, so that yee cannot doe the same things that yee would.*] Who can say that holinesse is perfect in that man, in whom corruption of nature, not onely troubleth, but hindreth grace in its holy operation? Shall wee say this contention lasts but for a while after a man is newly regenerate: but in successe of time the spirit gets an absolute victory, corruption being not only ouermastered; but also annihilated? If wee say so, experience will accuse vs, and conscience will iudge vs to be lyars: Where is that man, & who is he named, that can say, he findes no rebellion or distemper in his affections or desires, no disorder in any motion of his soule: but that all within him is sweetly tuned vnto obedience, without iarre and discord arising from corruption? Certainly that humble confession of a most holy Apostle, may cause blushing in any such proud Iustitiary. Had Paul the body of sinne in him, and hast thou none? He fightes and wrestles [*against the Law in his members, rebelling against the Law of his mind.*] yea he is so checkt and mated by it, that [*he can neither doe the good hee would, nor avoide the euill hee would not, when he would doe well, euill is still present with him.*] And so tedious is this toile vnto him; that hee complaines of it at the very heart, and cries out bitterly for helpe in this conflict. Wherevpon though hee haue helpe from God through Iesus Christ, yet hath hee not full deliuerance from this inherent corruption, but is faine to conclude in this pittifull manner, [*So then I<sup>a</sup> my selfe in my minde serue the Law of God: but in my flesh the Law of sinne*] Euen Paul serueth God in the better halfe of him: doe what he can, sinne

*a Lawe in  
euen I my  
selfe*

will

K

will haue a place in his heart, & a part of his seruice though he be vnwilling to yeeld it. If any will compare and preferre himselfe to this holy man: hee may prooue himselfe prouder, but better then him he cannot. 'Tis arrogance for a *simple Frier* to claime perfection, when so great an Apostle disauowes it. He that will not acknowledge that corruption in himselfe, which *Paul* (in the name of all) confesseth in his owne person; tis not because such a one is more holy then the Apostle: but because he is ignorant, and sees it not; or high-minded and scornes to bee knowne of it. Furthermore, reason confirms what scriptures and experience doe witnesse; (*viz.*) that sinfull corruption will hang fast vpon vs vnto our dying day: for if wee suppose an vtter abolishment of sinne and corruption in our nature; it must needs follow, there will neuer bee any sinfulness at all in our workes and liues. Where the habit is perfect, the action is so too: and a sweet fountaine cannot send forth bitter waters. Wherefore seeing not the best of men can liue without manifold actuall sinns: It is apparant, that this ill fruit comes from a bad humor in the tree, and this defect of *actuall obedience*, comes from the imperfection of *habituall holinesse*. This is sufficient for iustification of the truth of our first proposition [*that inherent holinesse in this life, is not perfect;*] Because tis alwaies coupled with some sinfull corruption.

But here our aduersaries cry out with open mouth, that wee maintaine monstrous propositions. Namely <sup>b</sup> *That there is no inherent holinesse in a man thats iustified, that after iustification, a man still remaines a sinner and vniust. That in Iustification, sinne is not abolished, but only covered with Christs mantle.* Thence they fall to their *Rhetoricke*, that all *Caluinists* are but painted *Sepulchers faire without full*

<sup>b</sup> Becan. Tom. 2.  
tract 4. cap. 2.  
Quest. 1. & 3.

full of rottennesse within. Like foolish virgins that haue no oyle of their owne. But thinke to bee supplied by that of other folkes. Like wolues in a Lambes skinne, which hides, but takes not away their rauening and fierce nature. Like a leprous person in fine cloathes; that lookes to bee fauoured and embraced by his King, because he is well apparelled. For this is (say they) to teach, That a man iustified is yet a sinner in himselfe. That corruption filthinesse & uncleannesse remaine in him, when yet in Gods sight hee is accounted pure and cleane, because hee hath hid himselfe vnder the cloake of Christs righteousness. Whence also they tell vs it will follow, wee make Christs body monstrous, a holy, beautifull head ioyned to filthy leprous members. Christs marriage polluted; A most holy & faire Bridegroom coupled to a foule deformed Spouse.

To this wee say. Truth is modest; yet shee will not bee outfaced with bigge words. Their eloquence hath slandered; partly vs, partly the truth. Vs, in that they affirme wee deny all *inherent* righteousness in a person iustified, which is an impudent calumny. The truth, in condemning that for an error which is sacred *verity* taught vs by God in the Scriptures, (*viz.*) That a person iustified, is yet after that in himselfe in part sinfull. This wee still teach & maintaine for a truth, firme as the foundation of the earth, that cannot be shaken, namely, That although a Iustified person is by the grace of the Holy Ghost dwelling in him made inherently holy: yet this sanctity is not that perfect purity of the heart, which the law requires, because some degrees of impurity and corruption doe dwell in him till death. And therefore the most iustified person liuing, is yet in himselfe partly sinfull and vniust; but the sinfulness is pardoned vnto him in CHRIST.

Against this the Romish contend, labouring to proue, that in him that is iustified. Sinne doth not remaine at all:



but is utterly abolished. They proue it by such arguments as these.

I

c Iohn. 1. 29.  
d Heb 9. 28.  
e Act. 3. 19.  
El. τὸ ἱζα.  
ἀποθνήσκει,  
ὅτι.  
f Micha. 7. 19.

1. The Scriptures testifie, *That Christ is the e lambe of God, that taketh away the sinns of the world.* That *Hee was offered to take away the sinns of many.* That in repentance, our sinnes are *e blotted out.* That God *will subdue our iniquities and<sup>e</sup> cast our sinnes into the bottome of the sea;* in allusion to the drowning of the *Aegyptians* in the red Sea. Wherefore if sinne be taken away, blotted out, drowned in the Sea, like the *Aegyptians*: then sure it is abolished, and remains no longer.

2

a Ezek. 16. 25.  
b Apoc. 1. 6.  
c Iohn. 1. 7.

2. They proue it from the properties which are ascribed to *Sinne*; as namely these.

1. Sinne is compared to spotts, staines and filthinesse: but from thence we are washed by the powring on of (*cleane a water*) vpon vs; and by the (Blood of Christ.)

2. Sinne is compared to bonds, fetters; and the prison, whereby wee are holden captiue vnder the power of *satan*: Now *Christ* hath broken these chaines and opened these prison doores, hauing (*deliuered vs from the power of darknesse*) and (*redeemed vs from all iniquity*) and (*made vs free from sinne to become the seruants of Righteousnesse.*)

c Col. 1. 13.  
d Tit. 1. 14.  
e Rom. 6. 18.  
22.

3. Sinne is compared to *sicknesse*, diseases, and wounds. Now God is the best Phisition, the most skilfull Chirurgian: and where he vndertakes the cure, he doth his worke throughly: he cures all diseases and each one perfectly. Hee doth not spread on a sicke man a faire Couerlid, or couer a festered wound with a faire cloath, as *Caluin* imagins: but by a purgatiue potion he expells the disease, by a healing plaister hee cures the

the wound. So that there is not left, nor corrupt matter, nor dangerous sore, that can proue deadly according to that *Rom. 8. 1.* (*There is no condemnation to those that are in Christ Iesus*) that is. That is there is no matter at all for which they deserue condemnation, as those expound.

- 4 Sinne is likned to death, nay it is the *Spirituell death* of the Soule. Now hee that is iustified is restored to *Spirituell Life*, and where life is there death is quite taken away, seeing a man cannot bee aliue and dead both together. Wherefore the Apostle saith *Rom. 6. 6.* [*Our old man is<sup>e</sup> crucified with him, that the body fouer of sinne might bee destroyed, that hence forth wee<sup>th</sup> might not serue sinne.*] and verse 11. (*Wee are dead<sup>e</sup> vnto sinne.*)

Hence they conclude.

If the filthinesse of sinne bee washed away, the chaines of sinne broken, the diseases and hurts of sinne healed, the Death of sin abolished: then it followes, that sin is quite extinguished, & remaines no more in those that are iustified.

- 3 They argue thus. If sinne remaine in those that are iustified and be onely couered: then God either knowes of the sinne or knowes it not. To say hee were ignorant of it were *blasphemy* (*all<sup>h</sup> things being naked and bare before his eyes.*) If he know it, then either he hates it or he hates it not. If he doth not hate it how doth the Scriptures say true that he is a (*God that hateth iniquity.*) If hee doth hate it in them certainly he must punish it: God cannot see a fault & hate a fault but he must also punish it too. If he punish it, then he which is iustified shall yet be condemned which is absurd.

Vnto these arguments wee answere. Vnto the two former thus. When wee say *Sinne* remaines in a man regenerate &

K 3 Iustified

Iustificed wee must distinguish the ambiguity of the word *sinne*. In *Sinne*, to vse that distinction which is authenticall with our Aduersaries; There are three things.

- 1 *The offence of God*, which is the fault.
- 2 *The obligation vnto eternall punishment*, which is the guilt.
- 3 *The stainé or pollution of the soule, (viz.) the inherent vitious inclination of it vnto euill*. From whence the fault committed first issued, and which by committing of the fault is augmented. For euill once committed leaues a further pronenesse in the heart to doe it againe. This wee call the *corruption of sinne*.

Thus then we answer. *Sin* doth not remaine in those that are iustificed, & regenerate in the two first respects, *viz.* of the *fault and the guilt*, both which are taken away by the death of *Christ*. But *Sin* doth remaine in the regenerate according to the third respect, (*viz.*) the *vitious quality and corruption* thereof, inherent in the soule: VVee shall explaine these answeres, and apply them to the *Arguments*. VVee say then; that the *fault and guilt of sinne* in the *regenerate*, is vtterly abolished by the death of *Christ*. Which wee doe not take in such a sense as this. That in a man regenerate there is not at all any one fault or guilt to be found, for to say that a man regenerate, when he sins were neither faulty nor guilty, were a grosse vntruth, seeing tis impossible that man should sinne, yet God not be offended; that man should sinne, and yet not be guilty, and deseruing eternall death. VVherefore we confesse that in the holiest of men, if they sinne, ther's a true fault, and God is displeased with it; there is also true guilt, & for it they deserue to goe to hell. But yet this truth also must be acknowledged withall, that all faultinesse and guiltinesse are quite abolished & taken away from them by *Christ*

Christ, because that both are pardoned vnto them. God is offended; but yet they feele not the woefull effects of his indignation: because in Christ hee is graciously contented to be reconciled with them. Againe they haue deserued euermore death: but they come not to the paines thereof, because freed from the punishment by Christs satisfaction. Thus then we vnderstand the first part of the answer. That the fault and guilt of sinne is vtterly abolished, that is, totally pardoned vnto the regenerate, by meanes of Christ, so that no finall eternall punishment shall befall them therefore. The other part. That sinne (*in the vitious quality and corruption if it remaines in men iustified*) wee vnderstand with this necessary<sup>a</sup> limitation, that it remaines in them not in its power and strength: but in its being and life. It hath *vitam*: but not *Regnum*. It raignes where there is no Grace at all: but it liues euen where grace is. Which though it mightily abate the power of it: it cannot vtterly destroy its being. Hence now its easy to vnty the *Arguments*. Sinne is taken away, blotted out, drowned in the bottome of the sea, in regard of those mischieuous effects which sinne would haue brought on vs: God is reconciled, the obligation to punishment cancelled; and all the power, force, and strength of sinne defeated; So that like the dead Egyptians they can no longer pursue the *Israelites* to annoy them, nor shall stand vs as an aduersary in iudgement to condemne vs. The *Guilt* of Sinne is washed away totally by the blood of Christ; the filthinesse of corrupted nature is in part by Degrees cleansed by the *Spirit of Christ* powred on vs in his sanctifying grace. The fetters and bonds of sinne, whereby wee were held in bondage vnder condemnation these are quite broken asunder: but those chaines, whereby with *Paul*, *Rom. 7.* (*we are led captiue*) to disobedience.

Plal. 13. 3.

dience are some broken, all weakned. Wee are freed from the power of *Satan* and feare of Hell : but not wholly freed from sinne, whereby we are often captiues against our will. Sinne is a sicknesse, and God is the Physitian; a wound, and God is the Chirurgian, true: but he cures neither perfectly, yet correct that word. He cures our sicknesse and sores perfectly: but not suddainely, where he begins the worke hee will finish it: but he will not doe all in a day . The cure begins and goes onward to perfection during this life: but tis neuer finished till after death. *He forgives<sup>b</sup> all our iniquity* and thats done entirely and totally [*and healeth all our infirmities:*] but this is by degrees not all at once. In which course God hath no cause to feare the censure of a Iesuite for vnskilfulnesse, nor stands hee in need of mans counsaile for prescription, nor mans helpe to hold his hand in working, if the cure goe on more slowly then our foolish hastinesse thinkes fit. Thats fit and best what God thinkes so: and if wee count him faithfull and wise in his art, tis our duty to take his aduice: but saucy presumption to give him any. Lastly, where sinne is said to bee the (*Spiritual death of the soule*) and so life being restored to iustification death must needs be quite abolished: the weakenesse of this argument appeares streight, if the *metaphoricall* terme be changed into *proper*. The death of sinne is either the Separation of all grace from the soule, or the Separation of God fauour from the soule. Wee are dead in trespasses and sinnes both waies: In regard that in the state of vnregeneration the Soule is vtterly destitute of all grace and goodnesse: and also because in that condition it is liable to eternall death. Now the death of sinne that is eternall death in the perpetuall losse of Gods fauour this is cleane taken away from him that's regenerate. Christ by his death hath purchased

to him life and immortality. But touching that other death (that is) the want of all inherent Grace in the Soule) Wee say. That in regeneration Grace and Holinesse is restored to the Soule, yet not so perfectly as to abolish every degree of sinnefull corruption. Before regeneration the soule had no grace at all and so was vtterly dead but it followes not; that therefore in regeneration, it hath all grace giuen it in all perfection, and so made perfectly aliue: what euer harshnesse there is in the Metaphore, the plaine termes in this case are smooth enough. A man may be at once aliue and dead that is, at once a man may be partly holy, and partly sinfull. [*Our old man is crucified with Christ*] vpon whole crosse it receaued a deadly wound; (because Christ by his sacrifice hath procured the sending of the *Holy Ghost* into the hearts of the elect; who by sanctifying them, abolished their naturall corruptions by degrees. [*That so the body of sinne might be destroyed,*] that is, not presently annihilated: *namq[ue] in d[eu]m* made of no force and strength, made vnable to worke strongly in vs. [*That henceforth we might not serue sinne.*] Though alwaies wee should haue sinne in vs. So are wee [*dead to sinne*] not as if sinne were vtterly dead in vs; or had no more working in vs, then it hath in a dead carcase: but because the guilt of sinne is fully taken away, and the power of sinne hath receiued a deadly wound, doth bleed out some of its life now, and shall infallibly bleed out the last drop of its life hereafter.

Vnto the third Argument, wee answere thus, that the Hornes of those *Dilemma's* be made of wood, and may be easily battered. We say then that God sees and knowes the sinfull corruption which is in the regenerate; for we cannot assent vnto that wilde and franticke imagination of some; who haue troubled the quiet of some places in this land, by

preaching that God doth not, nay cannot see any iniquity or matter of blame, in those that be in Christ Iesus. We beleeue that nothing is hid from his eyes, nor bee our sins lesse visible to him then our graces. God knowes what sinnes his children commit, he iudgeth them to be faults, and such as deserue his infinite wrath. Yea, to goe further, as he sees the sinne of the regenerate: so hee hates it with a perfect hatred; it being impossible, that his pure eyes should behold impurity and loue it. But now what followes hence? If hee see it and hate it, then he cannot but punish it. True, that consequence is certaine. But whats next? If God punish that sin which is in the regenerate, how then is their sinne couered and their iniquities forgien? How doth hee account them iust, whom he knoweth and punisheth for vniust? Here's a *Sophisme*. He sees sinne, and hates sinne, and punisheth sin of the regenerate: Therefore hee punisheth it in, and vpon their owne persons. Thats a *non sequitur*. Hee punisheth it, but tis in the person of Christ [*who hath troden the Wine- presse*] of the fierce wrath of God conceiued against all sinfulnessse whatsoever in his *Elect*: by which meanes his hatred towards the sinne of the regenerate is fully satisfied, and also his loue towards their persons procured. Hee graciously passeth by their iniquity, pardoning vnto them what hee hates, and hath punished in Christ: in which respect he may be truely said not to see that sinne in them which he will never punish in them, and to couer that sinne which shall never be laid open in iudgement against them.

## CHAP. II.

*No man can perfectly fulfill the Law in performing all  
such workes, both inward and outward, as each  
commandement requires, against which  
truth Popish Objections are  
answered.*



And thus much touching the first Proposition & the first point wherein man falls short of his obedience to the morall law, (*viz.*) in the imperfection of *habituall inherent holinesse*.

We goe on vnto the next Proposition, touching Mans *actuall* obedience vnto the whole Law. Where wee teach,  
*That no man can perfectly obey the law in performing  
all such workes, both inward & outward, as each com-  
mandement requires.* 2 Proposit.

A man would thinke this point needed no other prooffe but only experience. In all the Catalogue of the Saints, can you pricke out one that after regeneration, neuer committed sinne against the law? Wee shall kisse the ground hee treads on, if we knowe where that man haunts, who can assure vs that since his conversion hee neuer brake the Law. Shall we finde this perfection in a Monkes Cell, or in a Hermites Lodge, an Anachorites Mue, vnder a Cardinals Hat, or in the Popes Chaire? All these are Cages of vncleannes, not Temples wherein dwells vndefiled sanctity. Neuer to sinne; thats a happinesse of Saints and Angels, with whom we shall hereafter enioy it: but whilst we are mortall we can but wish for it. [*Thy law (saith David) is exceeding large.*] It compriseth in it not a few, but many and manifold duties. Good workes are by a kinde of *Popish Solacisme* brought to

Plal. 119. 96.



a short summe *Prayer, Fasting*, and *Almes deeds*. These are eminent among the rest: but not the hundreth part of the whole number. There is besides a world of duties enioyned, and as many sinnes forbidden: each Commandement hath its seuerall Rankes, euery duty its manifold circumstances; to reckon vp all, were a businesse which the wit of the subtillest Iesuite, or the profoundest Divine could hardly master. To performe them is a taske, which is beyond the strength of the holiest man, who in finding it a great difficulty to doe any one well, would forthwith iudge the performance of so many an impossibility. But if this suffice not; wee haue expresse Scriptures to proue that no man doth actually obey the law in all points. Such places are these.

- 1 (1) 1. Kings 8. 46. *There is no man that sinneth not.*
- 2 (2) Eccles. 7. 20. *For there is not a iust man upon earth that doth good and sinneth not.*
- 3 (3) James 3. 2. *In many things we offend all.*
- 4 (4) 1. Iohn. 1. 8. *If we say that we haue no sinne, wee deceive our selues, and the truth is not in vs.*

Whence we conclude, that [*de facto*] neuer any did keepe the law: but brake it in some, yea, in many things. And therefore we say that the dispute of our Aduersaries, touching the possibility of keeping the law, vanishes to nothing. For seeing no man hath, or will ever actually keepe it (as the Scriptures witness) to what end serues all the quarrelling and dispute about the *possibility* of keeping it. Noe man shal be iustified by the law, because he hath a power to keepe it if he list: but because hee hath actually kept it. Whence it is manifest that the reply of our aduersaries is ridiculous. No man indeed doth keepe it: but yet they may if they will. For 1. What is that to iustification? Can a man thats regenerate be iustified by his obedience of the law, when yet after his re-  
generation

generation he doth not keepe it? 2. And againe. How know these men that there was, or is, such a power in the Saints to keepe the law, when yet the world neuer saw it brought into Act? Is it not more probable that what neuer was, nor will be done, neuer could nor can be done? Were they all idle, and did not doe their best indeanour? Tis true, none doth so much good as hee should and might: but yet tis a sharpe censure to say that none would put themselues forward to the utmost of their might. What shall be said of *S<sup>t</sup> Paul* (*Phil. 3. 12.*) Hee confesseth that himselfe was not yet perfect: but that he sought after it. How? negligently? No, with great diligence and intention. He followed after. [*Δεδούλωτο*] *v. 12.* and that eagerly, *Reaching forth to catch the things that were before* τοῖς ἀμωμοῖς καὶ ἀνενόχοις *v. 13.* And pressing towards the marke, καὶ σπρωγόμενος *v. 14.* Here was diligence, & we cannot say that *S<sup>t</sup> Paul* did not doe his best. Did *Paul* then fulfill the Law? It seemes so, for here we see he was willing, and in another place *Bellarmino* tells vs hee *Lib. 4. cap. 20.* was able, for so wee haue it, *Phil. 4. 13.* *I can doe all things through Christ that strengthneth me:* that is, fulfill the moral law by the grace of Christ. Now if he were willing and able then certainly he kept it. Nay tis certaine he did not keepe it. Witnesse the testimony of himselfe. *I doe not the good things which I would: but the euill which I would not, that doe I, Rom. 7. 19.* Where is the fault then? In the Apostles will? No, tis plaine he would haue done it. Was it then in his ability? Yea, this was it. To will was present with him: but hee found no meanes to performe that which is good, *verse 18.*

The *Iesuite* then abuseth vs with a false exposition of that place to the *Philippians* interpreting it of the Apostles ability to performe the morall law, which himselfe meant con-

cerning that strength wherewith Christ enabled him vnto contentation and patience in all conditions whatsoever. *Paul* was able to beare all afflictions patiently, to vse prosperity soberly: but to fulfill the Law in all things perfectly hee was not able. And if he were not, who is? Wee conclude that the actuall obedience of the morall law in fulfilling all the commandements exactly, is impossible to a regenerate man in this life. Let vs now take a short survey of our adversaries Arguments whereby they would proue that actuall obedience to the whole law is not only possible: but also very easie to the regenerate and iustified. They are those.

Bel. l. 4. de Iust.  
cap. 1. 10. 11.  
12. 13.  
Becan. tom. 2.  
tract. 4. cap. 4.  
quest. 1.  
c. pag. 61.

I *That burden which is light may bee carried without shrinking vnder it, that yoke which is easie, is worne without paine; those Commandements which are not burdensome, may be obserued without difficulty. But such is the morall law. [My yoke is easie and my burden light] Mat. 11. 30. [This is the love of God that ye keepe his Commandements, and his Commandements are not <sup>c</sup>griuous.] 1. Ioh. 5. 3. Ergo, The Morall Law may be easily obserued.*

To this we answer, that the place of *Matthew* is to bee vnderstood not of the morall law: but of the yoke and burden of the crosse and afflictions which euery one must beare, that will follow Christ and obey the Gospell. To those that are wearied and laden with the crosse, Christ speakes by way of consolation, telling them whether to resort for help. (*Come to me and I will giue you rest*) that is comfort and deliuerance. 2 Then hee perswades them to patience vnder their affliction. [*Take vp my yoke vpon you*] and beare it chearefully, which his perswasion he strengthens with three arguments. 1 From his owne example. [*Learn of mee*] to doe and suffer as I doe, enduring so many persecutions and afflictions

afflictions with all meeknesse and patience. *For I am meeke and lowly in heart*, quietly bearing all wrongs and indignities from man without murmuring against God, repining against man, seeking revenge at their hands that haue vniustly persecuted me. 2 From the successe of this patient enduring according to *Christs* example. *And yee shall finde rest vnto your soules*; comfort in affliction, seasonable deliuerance from affliction. 3 From the nature of such crosses. *For my yoke is easie, &c.* Though they be yokes and burdens which for the present seeme grievous: yet they bee easie, they be light, because *Christs* yoke and *Christs* burden, which he laies on all his true Disciples that follow him, and which he will giue them strength to support and beare out with cheerefulness. This seemes the most naturall interpretation of this place, and it is most agreeable to the twelfth Chapter to the *Hebrewes*. Where the like arguments are vsed to comfort the godly in such afflictions, as follow the profession of the Gospell. But yet if wee vnderstand it of the yoke and burden of the Law: Wee answere to it, and that place in *John*, that the Commandements of God are not grievous to the Regenerate; not because they can perfectly and easily fulfill them: but because that which made them intollerable and vsupportable vnto them, is now taken away. Whats that? The rigor of the law in requiring of every man exact obedience, vnder paine of the curse of eternall death. Here was the vneasiness of the yoke which pinched man in his sinfull state; this was the waight of the burden, vnder which every man out of *Christ* must needs bee crushed and sinke downe to hell. Now *Christ* hauing fulfilled the Law, and satisfied for all our transgressions thereof, hath made this yoke easie for the necks, and this burden light vpon the shoulders of the regenerate; because, though they bee tyed

to

to obey; yet not vpon those seuerer termes of being eternally accursed, if they at any time disobey. Now they are assured their hearty obedience shall be accepted, so farre as they are able to performe it; and where they faile they shall be mercifully pardoned. Which is a singular encouragement of a Christian heart, to shew all willing and cheerefull endeavour in obeying Gods Commandements, whereby he may giue good prooffe of his vnfained loue vnto God himselfe.

2

Again we answer that this vneasinesse & burdensomenesse of the *Morall Law*, is to bee taken in regard of the enmity and opposition which a carnall man beares vnto the obedience thereof. Vnto a naturall man it is the greatest toyle and wearisomenesse in the world, for him to bee made to drawe in this yoke. For him to bridle his desires; to checke his disordered affections; to restraints himselfe of his pleasures; to be tied to the exercise of *Religion*, to haue a lawlesse minde brought in subiection to a strict Law. Oh what a wearinesse is it, how he snuffes at it? Hee chafes and sweats vnder such a burden, more then vnder the waight of ten talents of lead. But now vnto a heart sanctified by grace, all such obedience becomes sweet, pleasant, and delightfull. The heart now loues the holinesse of the Law; it <sup>b</sup> *delighteth in the Law*; takes contentment in <sup>c</sup> *the obedience of it*, and is full of singular affection and desire after it. Whence though it faile in many things through manifold infirmities and temptations: yet it ceaseth not in a willing, constant, & cheerefull endeauour to performe all. Grace fighteth with many difficulties, and in the combate takes many a foyle: but yet at last the victory falls on her side. For (saith Saint *John*) <sup>d</sup> *He that is borne of God overcommeth the world*. So that *the lust of the eyes, the lust of the flesh, and the pride of life*; which he vnderstands by the world, (1. *John* 4. 16.) prevaile

not

Mal. 3. 13.

superius

c. c.

<sup>b</sup> Rom. 7. 27.<sup>c</sup> Pl. 119. per

volum.

1. Ioh. 5. 4.

not against him, to turne him away from the holy commandment giuen vnto him. But he still obeyes cheerefully and syncerely; though not euery way perfectly. This of the first Argument. The second is this.

- 2 *If the hardest precepts of the Law may bee kept; then much more all the rest which are easier.  
But the hardest precepts may be obserued, --- Ergo, the rest also.*

They proue the *minor* thus.

*Three precepts there are, which are most hard as all confesse.*

- 1 *Thou shalt loue the Lord with all thy heart.*
- 2 *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.*
- 3 *Thou shalt not couet.* ----- The tenth Commandment.

*But now all these three commandments may bee kept by the regenerate. Ergo the rest; and so the whole law.*

We deny the *minor* of the *Prosyllogisme*; and say that those three precepts are not to be kept perfectly by any man in this life. They proue it in each particular.

- 1 *That a man in this life may loue God with all his heart.* This they proue.

1 *By Scripture. Deut. 30. 6. The Lord thy God will circumcise thy heart, and the heart of thy seed, to loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, that thou maiest liue. This is a prediction or promise of that which was heretofore, and is still accomplished in the regenerate, who being sanctified and purified from sinne (a worke of Gods spirit in the heart figured by externall circumcision of the flesh) should loue God with all their hearts.*

- 2 *By example of Dauid, who saith of himselfe, Psal. 119. 10. With my whole heart haue I sought thee; and God also testifies*

*Hifies of him: That he kept his commandments, and followed him with all his heart, to doe that only which was righteous in his eyes, 1 Kings 14.8. The like is recorded of Iosiah, 2 Kings 23. 25. And like unto him was there no King before him that turned to the Lord with all his heart, and with all his saule, & with all his might according to all the Law of Moses: neither after him arose any like him. These men then loued God with all their hearts.*

3 By reason; For to loue God with all the heart, carries one of these three senses. First, to loue him only, and nothing else, and so wee are not commanded to loue God with all our heart, because we must loue our neighbour too. 2 To loue him tanto conatu, quanto fieri potest; (that is) as much as may be. Nor is this commanded (saith Bezanus) and yet if it were, who would say it were impossible to loue God as much as one can. 3 To loue God aboue all (that is to preferre him before all creatures, before father and mother, as Christ bids Mat. 10. 37. and as Abraham did before his onely sonne. Now this only is to loue God with all the heart, and thus, men may doe as appearet in the Martyrs and others, who left all for Gods loue.

Vnto these Arguments wee answer. That it is not so easy a matter to loue God, with all the heart, as these imagine. a l b. 4. c. 11. a *Bellarmino* indeed makes a (but) at it. There is nothing required (saith hee) of vs: But to loue God with all the Heart. As if it were as easily done, as spoken: But wee beleue that in this (But) God hath set vp a white, which all the men in the world, may and must aime at: but none will shoote so steadily as to hit it. Vnto the place of *Deuteronomy*, we say. God therein tells vs what his gracious worke is in *circumcising*, or *sanctifying* our hearts, & what our bounden duty is therevpon (*viz.*) to loue him with all our hearts: the

the performance whereof wee must endeavour sincerely, though we cannot doe it perfectly. For the examples of *David* and *Iosiah*, who are said to follow the Lord with all their heart; there is nothing else meant thereby: but a sincere intent and endeavour in the generall to establish and maintaine Gods pure Religion in their kingdome free from corruption of *Idolatry*; as also for their owne particular conuersation to liue vnblameably. For *David*, tis a cleare case that not perfection; but syncerity is his commendations; whose many sinns recorded in the scriptures witnesse sufficiently that he had in his heart that corruption which many times turned the loue thereof from God to other things. How did hee loue god with all his heart when hee defiled *Vriahs* bed, shed *Vriahs* blood, intended to murder *Nabal*, andg'd away an honest mans lands to a fawning *Sycophant*, with such other faults. The *Prophet* himselfe in that place *119. Psal.* witnesseeth; as the vprightnesse of his heart [*with my whole heart haue I sought thee;*] so withall the weaknesse and corruption of it: against which he humbly craues Gods assistance in the very next words, [*Let me not wander from thy commandements.*] For *Iosiah*: tis plaine that this singular commendation is giuen him, because of his through reformations of the most corrupt estate of religion, which was before his reigne. Wherein many Godly Kings before him had done some thing in redressing some abuses: but none went so farre in a zealous reformation of all, according to *Moses* Law. Wherefore the text saith, that there was no King before him like vnto him, which cannot bee meant absolutely of all, (for *David* is said to follow Gods will with all his heart; as well as *Iosiah*;) but since the time that religion began to be corrupted in the *Iewish Church*, there was none of all the Kings of *Iudah*, that was so faithfull as *Iosi-*



*ab*, to restore all things to the first purity. Whence he hath the praise, that he turned vnto God more entirely, then any other King before or after him. But now from *Iosiahs* zeale in reformation to conclude, that in euery particular of his life he kept the Law perfectly, louing God with all his heart; is a consequence, that wants strength of connexion.

Vnto the reason from the meaning of the Law, we grant. That the first is not the meaning of it. But for the second, (*vi&*) *That to loue God with all the heart, is to loue him as much as may be.* The *Iesuite* hath no reason either to deny, that this is not commanded; or to affirme that if it were commanded, tis yet possible to doe it. Would any man say; except hee care not what hee say, that God doth not command vs to loue him as much as may bee? Or will it bee a truth from any mans tongue, to say, that he loues God with as great perfection as may bee? It cannot. Which appeares thus. Gods will is, that wee should loue him with all our hearts. Now Christ hath taught vs to pray. *Thy will be done earth as it is in Heauen.* Thence tis euident, wee on Earth are bound to fulfill the commandement of louing God: as the saints in heauen doe fulfill it. But now our Aduersaries themselues grant, that whilest we bee [*in viâ*] wee cannot loue God so much as wee shall doe [*in patriâ*] whence it followes, that no man can loue him so much as may be, and as he ought to doe: seeing no man hath his heart replenished with that measure of diuine loue, whereof his nature is capable, which either *Adam* had in his innocency; or the Saints haue in glory.

Touching the third sense of the words, wee grant indeed; that to *loue God with all the heart*, is to *loue him super omnia*, that is aboue all creatures. But the *Iesuites* take here but one part of true loue of God. Tis a singular part of diuine

uine loue, when the heart is so fixed on God: that neither the loue nor feare of any earthly thing can draw it from obeying of God. Which wee say, is a matter wherein euery one failes in some kinde or other, more or lesse, though in the end many Martyrs and other holy men, haue herein by faith ouercome the world. But this is not enough vnto perfect loue, to preferre God before all temporall paines and pleasures, profits or discommodities. He loues God with all his heart, not only who loues him aboue all, but also obeies God in all. *This is the loue of God that wee keepe his commandements.* Hee that for Gods loue will not obey Gods Law: hee loues his sinns more then God. Offend but in the least thing, ther's presently want of loue: for he that will not doe as God bids him then, is voide of that loue which moues him to obey at other times. *Hee then that keepeth Gods word, in him is the loue of God perfect indeed.* -- ἀληθὴς πικρίας, 1 Iohn 2. 5. Perfect obedience and perfect loue are inseparable. Now seeing the former cannot be found in mortall men: wee cannot in them seeke for the latter. And therefore this commandement [Loue God aboue all things] cannot be kept in this life.

2 *That a man may loue his neighbour as himselfe. For which purpose they turne vs vnto Rom. 13. 8. Hee that loueth another hath fulfilled the law. Because the law is comprehended in this saying, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, v. 9. & loue doth not euill to his neighbour: therefore is loue the fulfilling of the law, v. 10. And they bid vs looke Gal. 5. 14. Where wee read, For all the Law is fulfilled in one word: Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.*

Hereto we answere. That ther's in these places, nothing that needs answering. Wee grant, that the loue of our

M<sup>3</sup>,

neigh-

neighbour as of our selues, is the fulfilling of the Law; that is, of the second table of the law, touching our duty vnto man, & so much these places witnesse, commanding vs also so to doe. But now how doe our aduersaries prooue out of these places that men can perfectly obserue this Law. Wee yeeld the regenerate loue their neighbours as themselves: but that *perfection of loue*, which in euery point fulfills the Law, doing our neighbour no hurt, but all good, in all our thoughts, words and deeds; this wee cannot grant them, vnlesse vpon better proofes. Let vs goe to the tenth Commandement, which they say may be kept, that is.

3 *Thou shalt not couet. This tenth commandement of the Decalogue, is (say they) possible to be fulfilled by a Regenerate man. For three things must be obserued, touching this concupiscence, or coueting forbidden in the tenth commandement.*

1 *The vitious pronemesse and inclination of nature vnto bad desires, which is styled concupiscence in actu primo. As to haue a theewish minde.*

2 *The inordinat motions of the heart immediatly arising from that corrupt disposition, which preuent reason, and goe before consent; as to desire another mans money: but suddenly vanishest of it selfe, or vpon deliberation tis checkt.*

3 *The consent of the will, when either it takes immediate delight in such desires themselves; as speculatiue fornication, &c. or when it resolues to put in execution what the heart imagined; as to lay a plot to spoile another of his goods.*

*The two former, the vitious disposition of nature, and the inordinate desire that goe before consent these bee no sins, (say the Romanists) and so not forbidden in the ten commandements. The last (viz.) Enill desires with*

*with consent, they be the very sinns which are forbidden in that commandment; whence they conclude that a regenerate man may avoide the breach of this commandment. seeing it is in the power of his will, whether he will consent vnto such motions of the heart or no: & if he doe not consent, then he sinns not.*

Herevnto we answer. That whereas they of Rome teach, that the *Habituall viciousnesse* of nature and the *disorderly motions* of the heart which goe before consent, are no sins: they therein erre grossely against Scriptures and sound reason. Tis the gift of these men alwaies to iudge flatteringly and fauourably on natures side: they conceipt to themselves a God in Heauen like their God in Rome, *Facilem Deum*, one that will winke at small faults, and graunt *Indulgences* by the dozen. Looke what they iudge a small matter God must be of their minde: or else they are not pleased. His loue must fit their humors; what they thinke they can doe; that God shall haue leaue to command or forbid: but if otherwise they'le tell him to his face, that hee is a foole or a Tyrant, to command them that, which now they cannot performe. For God (say they) to require of man a freedome from all *vicious inclinations* and euill desires, this were as mad an iniunction, as for a master to command his seruant neuer to be hungry, or thirsty, hot or cold, and to threaten him, that he should looke through a halter, in case it bee otherwise with him. This error we shall more conueniently speake of in the refutation of common and generall exceptions, which they make against all those proofes, that doe demonstrate the impossibility of keeping the law, whereof this is one, that concupiscence in the first and second act is not sinne. But now whereas they affirme that it is in a regenerate mans power not to yeeld consent to the motion of sinne

sinne, and that therefore he may fulfill the law which sayed (thou shalt not lust) we graunt them that the spirit may many times get the victory, ouermastring such vnruely motions of the heart : but this is not perpetuall. For who is there (except extreamely ignorant of grace and nature) but will confesse that many times these *παθήματα τῶν ἀμαρτιῶν*, *affections of sinne* as the Apostle calls them, doe worke in them so strongly, vpon such circumstances and aduantages, that they doe non only [*ἀντιστατέονταί, cumbate and fight*] against the powers of grace, but also [*ἀνικτανίζουσιν, vanquish them*] and euen lead a man regenerate captiue vnto the law or command of sinne. The Apostle confesseth so much of himselfe *Rom. 7. 23.* Who yet was able to doe as much as he that thinkes himselfe best. And therefore what euer power we may seeme to haue not to yeeld consent, yet 'tis certaine that wee shall often faile in our practise.

This of the second argument touching the obseruation of the hardest precepts of the Law : The third followes.

3. Arg.

3 *If a man may doe more then the law requires, hee may certainly doe as much.*

*But a man may doe more then the law requires. Ergo he may doe as much.*

The minor Bellarmine proues by the example of the young man *Mat. 19.* who telling Christ that hee had obserued all the commandements and that from his youth, our Sauour bids him doe one thing more and then hee should be perfect. [*If thou wilt be perfect, goe sell that thou hast and giue to the poore and follow mee.*] *ver. 20.* Now if the young man had done this, he had done more then the law required. In as much as whatsoeuer the law required he had obserued formerly. For doe you not belceue him that hee spake true? [*all these things haue I obserued from my youth*] *verse. 9.* where-

Whereunto we answer. That we doe not beleue the testimony of that vaine young man touching his owne *righteousnesse*. Who boasted of keeping the second Table in the outward duties thereof: when as yet he wanted inward charity towards his neighbour and loue towards God. Hee avouched that he had kept all perfectly fulfilling that Commandement [*Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe:*] & therevpon is so bolde as to aske *Christ*. *What lacke I yet?* Christ to convince him of his pride and wants, puts him to the triall. If thou hast such perfect charity towards man; then certainly if God command thee to bestow, not a part, but all thy goods vpon the poore, vpon promise of better things to thy selfe: thy duty vnto God and singular charity to men, will make thee doe so. [*God then sell all that thou hast and giue<sup>a</sup> to the poore.*] Vpon this speciall Commandement, this couetous minde shewes it selfe. Nay, 'tis plaine he loued not his neighbour, so well as his riches. Hee is neither so duefull to God; nor charitable to the poore: as for either of their sakes, to part with his possessions. But, might he say, what? will not ordinary almes, or a little more then ordinary serue the turne? Must I giue away all. Indeed the Law requires that I be mercifull to the poore: but wheres any law that bids me sell my whole estate and distribute to them that want? Christ laies an vnecessary burden vpon me; if I cannot be perfect without vndoing my selfe, I will content my selfe as I am, and not seeke after such perfection. Here a Papist will say he spake reason, seeing Christs speech was but a counsaile of more perfection, then the Law required. Now a man is not to be blamed if he chuse only to bee as perfect as the Law commands him, and so this young man was; if you'le beleue him or them. But the Scripture makes it plaine that he did euill in disobeying Christ; and,

<sup>a</sup> *Abi. rois  
d'ouoits.  
i.e. da partem  
non omnia. Que  
expositio proba-  
bilis est, non in-  
fallibilis.*

that if he had obeyed him in that particular, he had done no more then the law required at his hands. For obedience to every speciall Commandment is included in the generall. The Law indefinitely commands vs to giue almes: now if God by a speciall commandment limit how much we shall giue; whether halfe or all our estates, to obey such a particular precept is not to doe more then the general law requires vs. Such a particular commandment was this of Christ vnto the young man, wherein hee sets him a spell, according to that conceit of perfection which he had of himselfe: putting him to the practise of the highest duty which the law of liberality can possible require of a man (*viz.*) to part with all. This hee ought to haue done vpon Christs particular commandment; in not doing of it he brake the law, and proclaimed his heart to be full of couetousnesse, devoid of faith in God; and true charity towards his neighbour. From this place then our aduersaries cannot proue, that this young man might haue done more then the Law required: or that we are bound at any time to doe as Christ bid him. Christs command was for his particular triall: not for our imitation. They that take it otherwise be a generation of men that professe beggery; and possesse kingdoms, who were willing enough to part with that little they had of their owne, that so they may liue the more *largely* and *plentifully* vpon other mens. We goe forward to the next argument.

4. Arg.

4 *If the Law were impossible to be kept it were no Law: for there is no law of things impossible. Yea God were more cruell and foolish then any Tyrant, to command vs to doe that which is impossible for vs to doe.*

To this we answere, that the consequences were true if God had giuen a law which men neuer had strength to performe. But now the law written in tables on Mount *Sina*,  
was

was but a renewing and repetition of the same law, which was written in *Adams* heart; the characters whereof were now defaced in his sinfull posterity. *Adam* had strength sufficient to fulfill it: which as he receaued for himselfe & vs; so he lost it for both. Neuerthelesse though strength to obey be lost: yet the obligation to obedience remaines. Wee are no more discharged of our duties, because wee haue no strength to doe it: then a debter is quitted of his bands because he wants mony to make payment. Nor is this cruelty or folly in God, that when he published this law vnto the *Israelites*, he did not qualifie the exactnesse thereof, fitting the precepts to their abilities, commanding them to doe iust as much as they could or would doe. Had God made a Law in that sort in fauour of mans sinfull nature: they might with better reason haue laid folly to his charge, for bending the rule to the crookednesse of mans heart; and not leuelling it according to the streightnesse of the rule. God was to set forth a law of liberty, that should not flatter but freely rebuke man of all vnrighteousnesse;<sup>a</sup> a perfect law containing in it a full description of *Holinesse* and *Iustice*, which man ought to haue and performe towards God and his neighbour: and in this case God had iust reason to haue respect vnto mans duty; not his ability, which once he had; but now had forfeited and lost.

<sup>a</sup> Iam. 1. 25.  
Pl. 19. 7.

The next argument is.

- 5 *Every prayer made in Faith according to Gods will is heard and granted. But we pray that we may fulfill the Law perfectly. ( For wee pray that wee may doe Gods will in earth, as it is in Heauen.)* 5 *Argument*  
*Ergo God heares vs, and giues vs such grace that we can doe it.*

Hereto we answere. That this prayer shewes vs what we



are bound to ; & what is our duty continually to endeavour. That wee may doe Gods will every day more perfectly, cheerefully and constantly, then other. And so farre God heares the faithfull prayers of his louing children, enabling them to better performance, the longer they lue. But that such perfection of obedience is giuen to vs in this life, as the Saints enjoy in heauen, will not be granted by our aduersaries themselues. Wherefore they must also grant that that prayer is heard and granted vs by degrees. In this life wee attaine such perfection as Gods sees fit for vs : afterwards, that which is compleat.

6 Argum. 6 They proue by these Scriptures, that the Law may be fulfilled. Gal. 5. The Apostle reckons up the fruits of the spirit. Love, joy peace, &c. then he saith vers. 22. that against ~~such~~ there is no law: [That is (saith Bellarm.) the law cannot accuse such men of sinne. So. 1. Iohn. 3. 9. [Whosoever is borne of God, doth not commit sinne, for his seed remaineth in him; and he cannot sinne because he is borne of God.] Ergo the regenerate cannot so much as breake the law.]

We answer. That both these places are peruerbed by false interpretations. Against <sup>a</sup> such there is no law saith the Apostle. Against what? Such persons, or such graces? If it be meant of persons, (*viz.*) that such as haue the spirit, and bring forth the fruits of, the spirit there mentioned against those there is no law: we must take it in the Apostles owne meaning, which he expresseth, vers. 18. [If ye be led by the spirit ye are not vnder law] How is that? Are not the Regenerate vnder the law, that is vnder the obedience of the Law. Yes; we grant on both sides that grace frees vs not from subiection and obedience vnto Gods law. How then are they not vnder the law. Tis plaine. They are not vnder the

the curse and condemnation of the law, as those bee that walke in the flesh and doe the workes thereof, who therefore [shall not *inherit the kingdome of God*, v. 19.] and thats to be accursed. But such as walke in the spirit being regenerate and iustified, are not vnder the curse: and therefore though the law may and doth accuse them of sinne: yet the law is not so against them, as to bring condemnation vpon them (as it doth vpon other) from which in Christ they are freed. If the clause be vnderstood of the *Graces* of the Spirit, there reckoned vp, the sense is this. Against such workes there is no law forbidding them, as there is against workes of the flesh: these agreeable, those contrary to the law. But this makes nothing to our aduersaries purpose. For the place in *Iohn* [Hee that is borne of God doth not commit sinne ye cannot] If our aduersaries exposition according to the very letter may stand good it will follow. That in the *regenerate* there is not only a possibility to keepe the law: but also an impossibility at any time to break it. But they easily see how absurd this position is, & that it being granted their doctrine of falling away from Grace lies flat in the dust: seeing *Ioh.* saith expressly. *That a man regenerate (not only) doth not, but cannot sinne.* Therefore certainly he cannot fall from grace. Wherefore they helpe it out with a distinction. Hee cannot sinne, that is, *mortally*. He may sinne, that is, *venially*; and *veniall sinnes* may stand with grace and with perfect obedience of the law. This distinction is one of the rotten pillars of the *Romish Church*; it will come in fit place to be examined hereafter: for the present, we say, He that sinnes *venially* (as they mince it) breakes the law; and againe a man *Regenerate* may sinne *mortally*; which is true not onely according to their doctrine, who teach that a man may fall from the grace of *Regeneration* which to doe is a *mortall*

*sinne*: but much more according to the scriptures and experience which witnesse that *Peter, David, Solomon*, and many, yea all the Saints, haue at sometime or other their grieuous falls; out of which, notwithstanding, by the grace of the *Holy Ghost*, abiding in them they recover themselves so that finally they fall not away.

The last Argument is from the examples of such men as haue fulfilled the Law.

7. *Argum.*

b Gen. 17. 1.

c Gen. 6. 9.

d 1. King. 14. 8

e 2. King. 13. 25

f 2. Chr. 15. 17

g Luke 1. 6.

h Ioh. 17. 6.

i Phil. 3. 15.

7 The Scriptures record that diuers men haue been perfect in fulfilling the law in all things: as <sup>b</sup> Abraham, <sup>c</sup> Noah, <sup>d</sup> David, <sup>e</sup> Iosiah, <sup>f</sup> Aza, <sup>g</sup> Zacharie and Elizabeth, the <sup>h</sup> Apostles, and other <sup>i</sup> holy men.

Therefore the Law is at least possible to be kept by some.

Not to stand on particular examination of all the places of Scripture, which are alleaged for prooffe of these examples; we answer briefly. That it is euery mans duty to aime at perfection in his obedience, according to Christs Commandement, *Mat. 5. 48. Be yee therefore perfect, even as your Father in heauen is perfect.* 2 That in this life there are many degrees of grace, which God bestowes diversly on diuers men, according to his owne pleasure, and their greater or lesse diligence in the practise of Holinesse. So that comparatiuely some men may be said to be perfect, because farre more perfect then others, as the greatest starres be said to be of perfect light, because they shine brighter then those of lesser magnitude, though yet not so bright as the Sunne. But 3. we affirme that no man in this endeaour after perfection goes so farre, as for *inward holinesse* and *outward obedience* to answer the perfection of the law in all points. Even in these holy Saints which they bring for instance, the Scriptures haue recorded vnto vs their fallings, that in them at once we may see a patterne of *Holinesse* to be imitated, and  
an

an example of humane infirmity, to be admonished by. We haue <sup>a</sup> *Abraham*, sometimes mildoubting of Gods promise and protection, and helping himselfe by a <sup>b</sup> shift scarce warrantable. <sup>c</sup> *Noah* ouer-seene in drinke. <sup>d</sup> *Dauid* breaking the sixth and seauenth Commandements one after another. <sup>e</sup> *Iosiah* running wilfully vpon a dangerous enterprise against Gods commandement. <sup>f</sup> *Asa* relying on the king of *Syria* for helpe against the king of *Israel*, and not vpon the Lord, <sup>g</sup> and in a rage imprisoning the Prophets for reprouing him; <sup>h</sup> and in his disease seeking not to the Lord: but to the *Physicians*. <sup>i</sup> *Zacharie* not giuing credence to the Angels message. The <sup>k</sup> *Apostles* all at a clap forsaking, or denying Christ. We cannot then in these Saints finde perfection in the full obedience to the Law; amongst whose few actions registred by the *holy Ghosts* penne: we may read their sinnes together with their good workes. And had the Scriptures beene silent in that point: yet who could thence haue concluded, that these men or others had no faults, because no mention is made of them? It was Gods purpose to relate the most eminent, not every particular action of their liues; euen Christs story falls <sup>l</sup> short of such exactnesse.

<sup>l</sup> Ioh. 20. 30. 31

Wee conclude then notwithstanding these Arguments. Our second *Proposition* standeth firme and good (*viz.*) *That no man in this life can fulfil the law in every duty both inward and outward: but that the iustest man on earth will faile in many things.* So if he should seeke for *Iustification* by this his actual obedience to the law: he throwes himselfe vnder the curse of the Law. *For cursed is every one that continues not in [all] things, which are written in the booke of the Law to doe them*, saith the <sup>m</sup> *Apostle* out of <sup>n</sup> *Moses*. <sup>m</sup> Gal. 3. 10. Which curse must needs light on those, that are of the <sup>n</sup> *workes of the Law*, that is, seeke for iustification and life by the

the obedience of the law, which yet they cannot in all things perfectly obey.

### CHAP. III.

*No man in this life can performe any particular good worke, so exactly that in every point it shall answer the rigor of the Law, proued by conscience, Scriptures, reason, and Popish objections answered.*

3 *Proposit.*



Proceed vnto the last *Proposition*, which concerneth *Mans* actuall obedience to any one particular precept of the Law. Wherein will appeare the third imperfection of mans obedience in fulfilling of the Morall Law. We haue scene. That no man hath perfect inherent *sanctity* free from natures corruption. Againe, That no man can performe perfect actuall obedience to all and every duty of the law without sayling in any one point. And this much our adversaries will not much sticke to yeeld vnto vs, and confesse. That there is no man, but sinneth at some time or other; and that tis scarce possible to avoid *veniall sinnes*, as they stile them. But then they deny vterly. That a man sinnes in every particular good worke; though he cannot doe all perfectly, yet in some hee may exactly fulfill the *Righteousnesse of the Law*, not missing in any one circumstance. And therefore at least by that obedience hee may bee iustified. This opinion of theirs hath neither truth in it selfe : nor yet brings any benefit at all to their maine purpose in prouing iustification by workes. For to what end serueth it them to stand quarrelling for the perfection of our obedience in some one or two good workes; when yet we faile in many things besides? One thing well done

done will not iustifie him that doth many things ill. For that of St James must bee a truth : *He that keepeth the whole Law, and yet faileth in one point, is guilty of all.* James 2. 10. Much more guilty is hee, that keepeth it in a few : and breakes it in many. But yet further, wee reiect this opinion also, as an error: and wee teach on the contrary. That

*No man in this life can performe any one particular good worke, so exactly; that in euery point, it shall answer the rigour of the law, and the seuerer tryall of Gods iudgement.*

About this assertion our aduersaries raise much stirre & many foule slanders against vs, proclaiming vs to all the world, open enemies to all good workes, that we bee Factors for the Kingdome of darknes, promoting as much as in vs lyeth all licentiousnesse in euill courses, and taking off the courage and endeaour of Men after pious duties. For who will set himselfe (say they) to doe any good worke if the Protestants doctrine be true, that in doing of it he shall commit a mortall sinne? Who will pray, fast, and giue almes, if when he doth these things he cannot but sinne? As good then it were to doe euill as to doe good : a man can but sin, and so hee shall let him doe his best. These slanderous incongruities fastned on vs, spring not out of our Doctrine rightly vnderstood: but out of froward and peruerse hearts, that will not see the truth. Such aspersions will easily bee wiped off, when after the confirmation of the truth wee shall make answeres to such obiections, as seeme to infringe it. We say then. That no man can performe any good work required in the Law with such exact obseruation of euery circumstance: that (were it examined by the rigour of the Law and Gods iustice) no fault at all can bee found in it. *This wee prooue by conscience, by Scriptures, by Reason.*

First we here appeale vnto the *conscience* of man, the iudgement whereof is to bee regarded; and wherevnto we dare stand in this matter. Thou that boallest that in such & such good workes; that thou hast not committed any sinne at all. Darest thou indeed stand to it, and vpon these termes appeare in Gods iudgement? Darest thou abide the strictnesse of this examination standing ready to iustifie thy selfe against euery thing that hee can object: Wilt thou venture thy selfe vpon this tryall euen in the best workes thou dost, that God cannot with his most piercing eye of iustice spy a fault in them, if hee number them, hee shall finde nothing short? If he weigh them not one graine to light? Again let conscience speake, when thou hast prayed, fasted, giuen almes, done any other excellent worke of *piety* and *Charity* in the deuoutest, and most vnblameable manner thou thinkest possible. Thinkest thou verily, that in this case thou needest not at all stand in need of Gods fauour, to passe by thine infirmities, and that thou needest not euen in this behalfe to pray; *Lord forgive mee my trespasses*? What man durst say or thinke in any good worke: Lord in this particular I doe not desire thou shouldest bee mercifull vnto me? Without doubt there is no man liuing vpon earth that shall in serious consideration of the seuerity of Gods iudgement, and the great infirmity of his owne nature, compare his owne obedience with the seuerity of Gods iustice, but his heart will presently shrink within him, and his conscience shunne this tryall; as much as euer *Adam* did Gods presence. The thought of such a strict proceeding in iudgement, would make the proudest heart to stoope and tremble, the boldest face to gather blacknesse, filling the soule with an horrible feare in the expectation of that day; should the most innocent life, the most holy actions of men be there

scanned

scanned according to the rigour of iustice: not gratioſly pitied, pardoned, & accepted according to that mercifull loue of God which couereth and paſſeth by multitudes of finnes. Twere arrogant pride in any man to vtter that ſpeech in a ſober temper; Whereinto *Iob* breakes out in a paſſion, chaſed by the ſenſe of his miſerable tortures; and the froward diſputes. of his friends. <sup>a</sup> *Oh* (ſaith he) *that a man might pleade with God, as a man pleadeth with his neighbour.* And againe, Lay <sup>b</sup> downe now, put me in a ſurety with thee, who <sup>b</sup> *is he that will ſtrike hands with mee?* And againe, *Oh that* <sup>c</sup> *I knew where I might finde him, that I might come euen to his face, I would order my cauſe before him, and fill my mouth with arguments. I would know the words which he would anſwere mee, and vnderſtand what he would ſay vnto mee.* <sup>c</sup> *Iob. 16. 21. Iob. 17. 3. Iob. 23. 3. 4. 5.*

Speakes the man reaſon or is he beſide himſelfe? What? challenge God to diſpute with him, and hope to make his party good in the quarrell? This was *Iobs* infirmity; Its our aduerſaries arrogancy, who dare ſet their foot againſt Gods; & bid him pry as narrowly as hee liſt into their good workes: they will maintaine the righteouſneſſe thereof againſt all that he can object to proue the leaſt *ſinfulneſſe*. *Iob* ſaw his folly: God grant that theſe may theirs; In a calmer temper, when conſcience was not ouerclouded with grieſe and anger: he reads vs a quite contrary leſſon. In the 9 Chapter of his booke. *How ſhould man bee iuſt with God? If he contend with him he cannot anſwere him one of a thouſand, v. 2. 3.* And againe, hauing reaſoned and queſtioned of Gods wiſdome and power, not to be queſtioned or reſiſted by any. *How much leſſe ſhall I anſwere him* (ſaith hee) *& chuſe out my words to reaſon with him? Whom though I were righteous, yet would I not anſwere: but I would make ſupplication to my iudge, v. 14. 15.* Further, *If I would iuſtifie my ſelfe*



First we here appeale vnto the conscience of man, the iudgement whereof is to bee regarded; and wherevnto we dare stand in this matter. Thou that boastest that in such & such good workes; that thou hast not committed any sinne at all. Darest thou indeed stand to it, and vpon thele termes appeare in Gods iudgement? Darest thou abide the strictnesse of this examination standing ready to iustifie thy selfe against euery thing that hee can obiect: Wilt thou venture thy selfe vpon this tryall euen in the best workes thou dost that God cannot with his most piercing eye of iustice spy a fault in them, if hee number them, hee shall finde nothing short? If he weigh them not one graine to light? Again let conscience speake, when thou hast prayed, fasted, giuen almes, done any other excellent worke of piety and charitie in the deuoutest, and most vnblameable manner thou canst keepe possible. Thinkest thou verily, that in this case thou needest not at all stand in need of Gods fauour, to passe thyne infirmities, and that thou needest not euen in this halfe to pray; *Lord forgive mee my trespasses?* What durst say or thinke in any good worke: Lord in thisicular I doe not desire thou shouldest bee mercifull vnto me. Without doubt there is no man liuing vpon earth that in serious consideration of the seuerity of Gods iudgement and the great infirmity of his owne nature, considering his owne obedience with the seuerity of Gods iudgement, his heart will presently shrink within him.

as much

*selfe, mine owne mouth will condemne mee, if I say I am perfect, it shall prooue mee peruerse. Though I were perfect yet would I not know my soule, I would disspise my life, v. 20. 21. And once more. If I wash my selfe with snow water, and make my hands neuer so cleane, yet shalt thou plunge mee in the ditch, and mine owne cloathes shall abhorre me. For he is not a man as I am that I should answere him, and wee should come together in iudgement. verse 30. 31. 32.* See this holy Saint, who elsewhere stands peremptorily to the defence of his innocency and vprightnesse against that wrongfull imputation of hypocrisy which his friends charged him with. all, telling them that till he die, he will not take away his innocency from himselfe, nor his heart shall not reprove him of his daies: yet when he sets himselfe before the Tribunal of Gods iustice, he dares not stand out in his owne Iustification, but submits himselfe to the mercy of his iudge, with humble supplication for his fauour. These confessions of *Iob* be not complements out of a fained and needlesse modesty: but the fruits of a conscience rightly informed and apprehensue of its owne sinfulness, & the seuerer rigour of Gods iudgement. The serious meditation of which two particulars, wee commend vnto our aduersaries, and all other of their humour; that are apt to entertaine fauourable & gentle opinions touching their sinns: and withall to nourish high conceits of their owne goodnesse. Whence they grow by degrees to thinke, that Gods iudgement is like their owne foolish imaginations; and where they out of blindness or selfe-loue cannot see a fault: that there God himselfe can finde none. Wee hardly see beames in our owne eyes: are wee then so skilfull to spy the smallest mote? Who can vnderstand his faults (saith *Dauid*) wilt thou answere him; Yes *I doe*? A secret fault may soone slip it, a deceitfull heart may

may in one circumstance goe beyond thy witt and watchfulnesse. Here then humility would doe well, and prayer for thy ignorances; for thy secret sinns; vnknowne to thy selfe as much as others. Here true modesty would haue her place, that thou preferre Gods wisdome and iudgement about thine owne, remembring that he iudgeth not as man iudgeth; but sometimes otherwise then thou doest, accounting that abomination, which in thine own eyes is much set by; & alwaies more exactly then thou canst; seeing much euill in that where thou seest little, & some euill where thou think'st there is none. And therefore alwaies speake vnto thy selfe in those excellent words of Saint *Iohn*; *if mine heart condemne* (as in many things it doth) *God is greater then my heart and knoweth all things.* 1 *Iohn* 3. 20. God forbid then that in any thing I should presume to plead with him in my Iustification. *He is wise in heart and mighty in strength; who hath hardned himselfe against him and hath prospered,* 1 *Job* 9. 2. Thus much touching our first argument, from the inward witnessse of the conscience. Which in the most innocent life, often in the most holy worke, drawes backe from Gods iudgement feare, and is afraid to put it selfe vpon the tryall of his seuerer iustice.

Wee haue the Scriptures to witnessse vnto vs the same Truth. *Psal.* 143. 1. 2. [*Here my prayer O Lord giue eare vnto my supplication: in thy faithfulness answer mee and in thy righteousness.*] Here the prophet seemes to appeale to the Iustice of God requiring his helpe vpon such termes, as if God out of pure iustice could not haue denyed him. But tis nothing so. Tis the mercy of God the holy Prophet sues vnto. Answer me in thy faithfulness and righteousness, that is, in those grations promises, wherein thou hast made mee to trust, wherevpon I doe rely. *Thou art iust*

& faithfull. in keeping promise, be so to mee in my distresse, who according to thy promise seeke vnto thee for succour. Vnto this righteousness of God *Dauid* presents himselfe, and his supplications; but before that strict & seuerer Iustice of God he dares not stand, but in all submissiuenesse prays in the next words. [*And enter not into iudgement with thy seruant.*] He craues mercifull audience of his prayers: but deprecates the strict examination of his life and doings. He knew well that if God should deale with him vpon so hard termes; his owne innocency could neuer haue made his prayers acceptable (*For (saith he) in this shall no man living be iustified.*) The force of this place <sup>a</sup> *Bel.* seeks to decline by three poore miserable shifts. That *Dauid* would not haue God enter into iudgement with him to iudge him (*scilicet*) according to such things as hee had of himselfe: but according to such things as God had giuen him, that is, *Iudge mee not according to that righteousness which I haue by nature: but according to that righteousness which thou hast giuen by thy grace.*) Which interpretation how ridiculous a phantasy it is, and quite besides the meaning of the Prophet, tis ealy for any one to iudge by reading of that *Psalme*. *Bell.* therefore hath another string to his bow: but as rotten as the former.

<sup>a</sup> Lib. 4. c. 20.

*Noli iudicare  
ex his quae in  
me habeo.*

2

2 That the place is meant of veniall sinns without which a Man cannot liue, and though they bee small faults: yet would it be no iniustice in God to punish them. So that the meaning is, [*Lord enter not into iudgement,*] that is, *Lord I will not contend with thee I confesse my selfe a sinner and craue pardon,* Diuerse small faults I haue committed not against the Law but besides the Law, and thou maiest easily pardon them. My case is not singular. I doe therein, but as other men doe, amongst whome, there is none so iust but some

some time failes and offends. And therefore doe not lay such faults to my charge. Men of corrupt conscience that thus sport with sinne and play with the Scriptures. The Iesuite must bring vs better proofes, then hee doth, else wee shall neuer belecue that *Dauid* was a man of *Bellarmino* his mind touching *Veniall sinns*. That doctrine is part of the dregs of corrupted nature, maintained by *Popish Moabites*, who are setled on their *Lees*, insatuated by the Loue of sin, and flattering themselues in that *wickednesse* as little and light which God accounted worthy to bee hated. Wee acknowledge no *Veniall Sinns*: but such as deserue eternall death, which hereafter wee shall make good. And therefore if *Dauid* would not that God should enter into iudgement with him, because of *Veniall sinns* that accompany his holiest practises, tis in effect, that which wee say; the difference is only in an *Epithete*. Wee say *Dauid* prayed not to come into iudgement, because [*his best workes were sinfull*:] and *Bellarmino* addes, *because venially*, or, *pardonably sinfull*. Which aduantageh him not a jot. For let him mince it, how him list: tis manifest, that these were such sinnes, as for them *Dauid* durst not venture his best workes to come vnto the Barre of Gods seuerer iudgement. There is yet another deuise.

That thirdly *Dauid* speaks by comparison. (*viz.*) that though the righteousness of his workes were true, being absolutely considered: yet being compared with Gods Righteousnesse, it seemed to be *unrighteousnesse*. As a candle set in the sunne seems to haue no light: and a little light compared to a greater, seems darknesse. Whereto we answered that *Dauid* here makes a confession of his owne sinfulness; not a comparison of his owne righteousness, with the righteousness of God. He desires that God will

not enter into iudgement with him; not because hee had not so much righteousness as God, in comparison of whom it seemed little or nothing: but because hee was sinfull, and had not so much *Righteousnesse* as hee should. Man may haue a *Righteousnesse* of his owne; infinite degrees, below the *Righteousnesse* of God, which yet may passe the tryall of Gods iudgement without all reproofe. As is manifest in the *Righteousnesse* of *Adam* and *Christs* Humanity: both which though inferiour to Gods *Righteousnesse*, were yet able to endure that strict examination. Wherefore wee are not accounted vniust for that imperfection, because we haue lesse *Righteousnesse* then our maker: But because wee haue not so much as wee ought to haue, according to the capacity of our nature wherein he made vs. But of this more hereafter. Let this serue for the clearing of this first place of Scripture, and the exceptions against it.

2 The second place of Scripture, is that, *Isa. 64. 6. But wee are all as an vncleane thing, and all our righteousness is as filthy raggs, and wee all doe fade as a lease, and our iniquities like the wind haue taken vs away.* This is the confession of the Church of God, submitting her selfe to him in the acknowledgement of her sinns, and the iustnesse of his anger against her. The confession is euery way generall: both for *Persons*, not one excluded; *wee all כלנו* are as an vncleane thing, and likewise for workes, none are excused from faultinesse. *All our righteousnesses* (nay in the plurall) *all our righteousnesses כל צדקותינו* are as filthy raggs. Hence they acknowledge that God is iustly angry with them, and that in his righteous displeasure, they are afflicted, consumed and brought into great aduersity, the glory of the Church, and state decaying more and more, like a fading lease that falls, from the tree, and is driuen away with the winds

winde; And we all doe fade as a leafe, and our iniquities like the winde haue taken vs a way. Against this plaine acknowledgement of mans sinfulness in all his most righteous workes, the *Isuites* except diuers waies.

I That the *Prophet* speakes here in the person, not of the godly: but of the wicked, who make here this confession of their finnes. And how proue they this? Thus. The Text saith, *Behold thou art wroth, for we haue finned*. Now God is not angry with the Godly: but with the wicked. Again, the Text saith, *There is none that calleth upon thy name*. that is, none of the wicked persons, for the godly doe call on Gods name. This exception is manifestly refuted by the whole order of the Text, whereby it is apparent to any that hath but halfe an eye, that this recognition of sinne, & praier for mercy beginning at the 15. vers. of the 63. Chapter, to the end of the 64. Chapter, is made by the whole Church, and all the faithfull therein, confessing their owne faults, as well as others, and suing for reliefe, not only in behalfe of others, but of themselues too. His reasons are worth nothing. God is not angry with the godly, saith *Bellarmino*, No? Then *Peter* is in an error, who saith, 1. Pet. 4. 17. 18. *The time is come that iudgement must beginne at the house of God; and if it beginne at vs, what shall the end of them bee that obey not the Gospell of God; And if the righteous be scarcely saued; where shall the vngodly and sinner appeare?* Heres iudgement on Gods house, that is, on the righteous that obey the Gospell, as well as on the vngodly that obey it not. And so tis, when the godly sinne<sup>1</sup>, they smart for it, in priuate afflictions, in publique calamities, both waies they finde God is not well pleased with their ill doings. When a Church and a State is ruinated, may not the most righteous take vp this confession. *Lord thou art angry for we haue finned*. Euen we by our

finnes haue hastned and increased the publique miseries? I trow, none will deny it. Againe, the Text speakes of those that doe not call vpon Gods name. But the godly call vpon it, *Ergo*, tis not meant of them. True, they doe call vpon Gods name: but is this done alwaies with that diligence, with that zeale which God requires? How comes it to passe then, that the godliest men are many times secure, slothfull, cold and carelesse in the duties of Gods most holy worship? Yea, in the corrupt and declining times of the Church this happily is their fault chiefly, who themselues begin to freeze in so general a coldnesse of the season, loosing much of that seruency of Spirit which the Apostle requires of vs, as at all times: so then especially, when it should reuiue and put heat into others, when their loue of religion begins to wax cold. At such times zeale in Gods seruice, vehemency in prayer, constancy in all religious exercises, resolute, but discreet forwardnes in the holy profession of religion is most commendable. But yet it so comes to passe, that even then much security and slacknesse ouercomes the godly, and whilest they should be a meanes to prevent a mischief, they hasten it vpon themselues and others.

And thus the Iewish Church here in this place confesseth that there were none that called on the name of the Lord, a carelesse negligence, & slacknesse in the seruice of God, was come vpon them, so that as it is in the next words, [ *There was none that stirred vp himselfe* *בְּרָחֳמָיו לְהַחֲיוֹת* *to take hold of God.* ] None awaked and rouzed vp himselfe with diligent endeaour to apply himselfe to the worship of God, a fault wherewith God may iustly bee angry: as hee then was. This first exception then is frivolous. Others there be as idle.

2 That by [all] in this place is to be meant the greatest part



part; not all the *Jewes*, nor all their workes were sinfull; but the *greatest part*. For so the word [ *All* ] is taken in some places of Scripture: and therefore the *Iesuites* thinke, it must needs be taken so here.

3 That if it be meant of [ *all* ] simply: yet tis not to be understood at all times. All the *People* and their workes were naught and sinfull, when they were to be carried away captiue: but it followes not, that they were so at other times.

4 This must be restrained to the righteousness which consists in obedience to the *Ceremoniall Law*. [ *All our Righteousnesse* ] that is, *all our Ceremoniall workes in Sacrifices, Observations of Sabbaths, New-moones, Fasts and such like, [ are as filthy clouts ]* being done in that manner as we doe them (*viz.*) without *Faith and Obedience*. To these we say, that there would neuer bee an end, were a man bound punctually to refute every cauill, which an aduersary may frame out of his fancy-full imagination, and froward heart. Vvee owe the Romanists no such credit: as to assent to any point of *Religion* vpon their bare affirmation. Vvee can as confidently deny such exceptions as these, without yeelding the a refutation: as they doe boldly make them without bringing any prooffe. And certainly most vaine and vngodly is that course which our aduersaries or any that tread in their steps doe hold in their disputations, about serious points of Christian doctrine: when being vrged with convincing Scriptures, they thinke they haue done the part of *Schollers*, and satisfied the *Consciences* of others desirous of truth, if they can amase and stonny you a little with two or three interpretations and pretty exceptions, and so leaue you to chuse which you list. They will not tell you which they will stand to: but euen when their answers crosse one another, yet all shall downe, that if one helpe not another may, and

altogether may vex you, when they cannot satisfie you. This quarrellsome humour of men, who seek not the truth in loue: but write to maintaine dispute, is not the least vexation of the spirit, and wearinesse to the flesh of man; as all those will witnesse, whose much reading hath lead them along into the perplexed mazes of *Schoole-learning*, whether *Divine* or *Humane*.

The third place of Scripture is, *Psal. 130. 3. If thou Lord shouldst mark iniquities, O Lord! who shall stand?* This place is parallell to the former, wherein the holy Prophet desires God to be attentiu to the voice of his supplications, cranes this audience meerey of Gods fauour; not vpon any righteousness or worth of his owne. As for that hee confesseth. That if *God should be strict to obserue* wherein hee and all men doe amisse: neither himselfe, nor any other could be able to stand in his presence. Whence hee flies from himselfe vnto his mercy. *But there is forgiveness with thee that thou maiest be feared. vers. 4.* Presumption then it is, and arrogant pride for any *Romanist* to say, Lord if thou doe obserue iniquities: yet I shall be able to stand. If such and such good workes, bee extreame to marke what is done amisse: I feare not the triall, nor will sue to thy mercy.

From Scriptures we come to reason. Which is thus.

Wherefoeuer there is *concupiscence* and inordinate motions of the heart; wherefoeuer there's a defect of charity towards God and man; Wherefoeuer *veniall sinnes* (as our aduersaries call them) are mingled with good workes: there the *best workes* of men are not free from some corruptions and sinfulness.

But in a man *Regenerate* there is *concupiscence* and euill motions of the heart present with him, when he would doe good; there is a want of that measure of loue to God, & charity

rity to man, which he might and ought to haue, there also are besides many *veniall faults* that accompany his best workes.

*Ergo*, the workes of a man Regenerate are not every way good: but in part sinfull.

The *Minor* is cleere and confessed by our Adversaries: especially for the two former circumstances of *concupiscence*, and imperfection of charity: and for *veniall finnes*, they also acknowledge it a very hard matter to avoid them in any good worke. Wherefore they are <sup>a</sup> driuen in a desperate manner to deny the *Maior* and to avouch. That neither *concupiscence*. nor imperfection of *Charity* to God or our Neighbour; nor yet *veniall finnes* mingled with good workes, doe at all impair the goodnesse and perfect righteousness of our obedience to the Law; but that they are as good with those infirmities, as without them. Bad causes must be helpt out, by bold and desperate attempts; and so it fares with our aduersaries in this point. They will vterly deny that there is any thing euill in a man Regenerate: rather then bee forced to confesse there is any thing euill in the workes that he performes. The impudent vnreasonableness of this their assertion, we shall shortly speak of. In the meane we goe on vnto the consideration of such arguments, which are brought by our aduersaries to proue; That the good workes of men *Regenerat*, are truly & perfectly good, without all *faultinesse* in them. They proue it thus.

- I First from the examples of Iob and Dauid. Of Iob is Rel. lib. 4. cap. 15. 17. said. *Iob. 1. 22.* In all this Iob sinned not, nor charged Becan. Tom. 2. tract 2. cap. 2. quest 4. & c. 4. quest. 1. God foolishly, and chap. 2. verse 10. In all this did not Iob sinne with his lippes. Againe for Dauid: he is confesious to himselfe, of his owne innocency, and that no fault can be found in his doings, wherefore he prays, *Psal. 7. 8*

*Iudge me, O Lord, according to my righteousnessse, and according to mine integrity that is in me. And after all this, Psal. 18. 23. 24. Hee professeth openly his innocency, and reward for it. I was, saith he, also upright before him, and I kept my selfe from mine iniquity. Therefore hath the Lord recompenced mee according to my righteousnessse, according to the cleannesse of my hands in his sight. And Psal. 17. vers. 3. Hee declares how God had thoroughly tried him: and yet found him faultlesse. Thou hast proued mine heart, thou hast visited me in the night, thou hast tried mee, and yet shalt finde nothing: I am purposed, my mouth shall not transgresse. How then can any man say that Iob and David sinned mortally in their sayings and doings: when God himselfe witnesseth for them that they doe not sinne?*

Hereto we answere. That we doe not lay sinne vnto the charge of those holy men: nor doe we say they did ill, where the Scriptures witnesse they did well. *Iob* in that first Act of his tryall quitted himselfe well, and ouercame the temptation. He sinned not as afterwards he did, breaking forth into impatiency: & that is all the scripture meant by that speech *In all this Iob sinned not*. But whether *Iobs* patience were in this first conflict every way so vnreproueable, that not the least fault could be spied in it, in Gods seuerer iudgement, is more then we dare affirme, or our Adversaries will ever be able to proue. For *David*, his innocent demeanour of himselfe, in the time of *Saules* raigne was such: that no imputation of vnfaithfulnesse or ambition could iustly be laid to his charge. Wherefore when *Saules* followers accuse him of treason against their Master: *David* appeales vnto God, desiring him to deale with him according to his innocency in that behalfe. His owne conscience, and God with his conscience

ence, after triall made, acquit him from plotting and practising against *Saul*, as his Aduersaries said he did. Thence it followes that *David* did not offende in that kinde whereof his Aduersaries accused him. His heart was vpright; his life was innocent, neither his Aduersaries could make prooffe, neither did his conscience accuse him, or God condemne him of these faults, that he was charged withall. Thus far *David* durst stand to Gods iudgement; that hee was innocent in those particular evils, whereof man had accused him: but it followes not therefore hee durst enter into iudgement with God: and plead, that God himselfe could finde no fault at all with him. He might haue many secret faults and imperfections euen in this most innocent passage of his life; which neither himselfe knewe, nor his enemies could come to the knowledge of: and therefore though he dare plead his righteousness before God, so farre as man can accuse him of vnrightheousnesse, yet hee dare not goe further to cleere himselfe against all that God may obiekt against him. Heare what himselfe saith in this case, *Psal. 139. 23. 24. Search me, O God, and knowe my heart, try mee and knowe my thoughts.* Speakes the Prophet this out of confidence, that God vpon search and triall, shall finde no evil in his heart & thoughts? No, but out of holy desire, that whatsoeuer evil is found in him may be amended. Hee knowes well that many things may be found faulty in him: and therefore hee stands not to iustifie himselfe: but onely sues for grace to redresse them; adding in the next words. *And see if there bee any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.*

2 They proue that the workes of men *Regenerate* are not *sinfull* by the *Scriptures* which call them *good workes*, & say that they are *pleasing vnto God*. 1. That they are good. [*Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good*

good workes] *Math. 5. 16.* [Charge the rich that they doe good and be rich in good workes] *1. Tim. 6. 18.* [Wee are his workmanship created in Christ unto good workes] *Eph. 2. 10.* [Why trouble yee the woman; for shee hath wrought a good worke upon me.] *Mat. 26. 10. 2.* That they are also pleasing vnto God is apparant by these places. *Yee are made [an holy Priesthood to offer up spirituall sacrifices, acceptable to God by Iesus Christ] 1. Pet. 2. 5.* In the Epistle to the Philippians, The Apostle calleth their almes sent vnto him (an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing vnto God) *Phil. 4. 18.* Again. [To doe good and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased] *Heb. 13. 16.* Hence they argue. *If the workes of men regenerate bee good and acceptable vnto God: then certainly the Protestants erre in their doctrine, teaching that the best workes of Men are sinfull for as much as sinne is neither good in it selfe, nor any way pleasing vnto God. Who is infinitely offended at all iniquity.*

Herevnto wee answer. That this argument is nothing, but a froward and wilfull mistake of our doctrine. Wee teach, that the best workes of the best men are in part sinfull. They thereupon cry out that wee take away all goodnesse from the workes of the Godly, and that wee account them to be [*in se. a i. e. Ex natura sua*] damnable and mortall finnes. This is a foolish calumny of men that cannot distinguish betweene the disease and the diseased body: but straightway conclude that the whole body it selfe is nothing else, but a meere rotten vicer, because it hath swellings and sores in some part of it. Wherefore to vnfold their eyes in this point, they are to vnderstand that wee make a necessary & true distinction between *That which is sinne* & *that which is sinfull*: teaching that the good workes of the

Regenerate

a Perverting  
Caluins words  
*Ne unum a  
sautis (exit)  
opus, quod si (in  
se) censetur non  
meretur iustitiam  
approbrii mercedem Calu. Inst.  
L. 3. c. 14. § 4.*

*Regenerate* be not sinns, though they be sinfull. Wee explaine it thus. That is to be called *Sinne* in its owne nature, which is the transgression of the law in doing any act forbidden; or in leauing vndone any act commanded by the Law. The omitting, or committing of any such act is properly [<sup>b</sup> *in se & ex Naturâ suâ*] a *sinne*. Because it is directly and totally in the very substance of it against the Law.

Asto pray to a false God, or neglect prayer to the true God, are both of them sinnes in their very proper natures: because both are forbidden by the morall law. That wee call *sinnefull*, which is for the maine substance of the worke conformable to the Law; but it failes and offends against the law in some circumstances required in the doing of it, when the thing is done which the Law commands, but not perfectly in euery point as the Law commands it: such a worke we say, is not a *sinne*, though it bee sinfull; there is *sinne* in it, but it is not all *sinne*. This distinction our Aduersaries cannot but admit of, as in the *workes of the Heathen and Christians vnregenerate*: so in the good workes of the *Regenerate* themselves. Wee and they confesse that the morall vertues of the *Heathen* were good and commendable in the *substance* thereof: nor doe wee thinke there is any man so deuoide of reason, as to affirme that the *Iustice, temperance, Chastity, Liberalty* of a *Heathen*, are meere *vices*, and *sinnes*. Wee all grant, they were *vertues*: but yet our Aversaries themselves cannot affirme, that they were euery way vertuous, free from all spots and staines of *Vice*; seeing they had neither faith & sanctity from whence they sprung; nor the glory of God at which they aimed. Now as the vertues of the naturall man, are in part vitious: so the *good workes* of the *Regenerate* are in part sinfull. To fast, to pray to giue almes, with the like workes of *Piety* or *Mercy*,

<sup>b</sup> Bell. l. 4 c. 17.  
erres in laying  
(*opera bona ex genere sine ex obiecto, sed mala ex circumstantiis, non sunt bona simpliciter: sed mala (sc. simpliciter) quoniam bonum non existit nisi ex causa integra: malum vero ex quolibet vitio*)  
And it is false which he addes that God doth simply condemne (*facto*) almesdeeds, &c. don with a bad intention for vaine glory, &c. God doth not simply condemne the worke; but them for the ill doing of it.  
*c* Sunt vitiosa non vitia.

wee

we affirme and teach that they are *good workes*, good in their nature and vse: being such actions as the Law commands. Wee know none of our side so farre gone with passion, as to maintaine that a godly man sinnes because hee fasts, prayes, and giues almes; as if those very acts were nothing but damnable sinne. Wee detest such francticke opinions; and if any of our writers haue let slip such words, as may giue occasion to our aduersaries, so to thinke of vs; we doe not, nor are wee bound to iustifie euery hot and cholericke speech, breathed out in eagernesse of disputation. *Good workes* they bee, truly and verily *good*: but they are not perfectly good. When a good man prayes he doth well: but he neuer doth so well; but he may doe better. Nor dare any man in the world auouch: that either the root whence *good actions* come, is purged by perfect holinesse: or the manner of doing them; is so exactly kept in a precise obseruation of euery circumstance, or the end in doing them Gods *glory*, and mans *good*, so sincerely and truly aimed at, that the *seuerity of Gods iustice*, cannot finde any the least failing in any of those things. This is all we teach touching the *sinfulness of good workes*, and thus wee stand too, as a most certaine truth. And wee say *That this sinfulness* accompanying our good workes, is sufficient to barre vs from *Iustification* by them. For wee deserue not reward for what is well done, except all were well done. But neuerthelesse it shall not hinder Gods gracious acceptation of our *good workes*, who is well pleased with the obedience of his children, so farre as it is good and holy: and when it failes, for *Christs sake* he mercifully pardoneth their trespasses. Thus much of the second Argument. The third is from reason grounded on scriptures.

3 *where there are* (sufficientia principia rectæ operationis)



tionis) *sufficient causes and meanes of well doing: there a good worke may bee done without all fault---* But in a man regenerate, there are causes and meanes sufficient for well-doing ---- Ergo, Hee may doe well, and not offend.

They proue the *Minor* thus. To the performance of any good worke, there is required nothing, but these things. Knowledge of what is to be done, will and power to doe it ---- But now a regenerate man hath all these. For first, his understanding is enlightened, so that hee can easily know what is good to bee done. Secondly, his will and affections are sanctified and aided by grace, to desire and endeavour the performance of it. And thirdly, and lastly, hee hath power to put in practise what hee knowes & desires, there being no impediment inward, or outward that should hinder him --- Ergo, he may doe well and sinne not.

Here wee desire them to shew vs how a man Regenerate is endued with such perfect abilities, as may helpe him: and quite rid him of all such impediments, as might hinder him in well doing.

*This (say they) is done by the grace of sanctification, giuen vnto a Regenerate man, whereby he is freed from all contagion of sinne: and such incumbrances, as hinder him in well-doing. For by this grace giuen to him, hee is made a good tree: now [A good tree cannot bring forth bad fruit, Mat. 7. 18. --- And ergo, a good man cannot doe bad workes. Again, hee is made a fruitfull Branch of Christ the true vine, as it is Iohn 15. 5. I am the Vine, yee are the branches, he that abideth in mee, and I in him, the same beareth much fruit. And Ergo, That fruit only which is good, which similitude of a*

⁊ Ridicule.

Branch much illustrates the matter (in their imagination.) For as in a vine-branch. If first it haue sufficient moisture from the body of the vine. Secondly, if it haue sufficient heat of the sunne to digest that moisture. And thirdly, if it bee not hurt nor hindred by Frosts, wette, windes, wormes, or other such discommodities of the Ayre and soyle; then certainly it will beare very much, and very good fruit: so is it in a man regenerate. From Christ he receiues sufficient moisture of diuine grace, which is in him, [as a well of water springing up vnto euerlasting life. John 4. 14.] He hath heat sufficient of spirituall affection, to cause him to bud forth into good workes. For Christ saith [<sup>2</sup> I am come to send fire on earth, and what will I if it bee already kindled. Luke 12. 49. And [Did not our hearts burne within vs] said the two disciples that went to Emmaus, Luke 24. 32. Ergo, they haue heat enough. Finally, they haue no impediment. Neither inward. For why? It is written, Rom. 8. 1. There is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus. Ergo, no inward impediment to well doing. Nor outward. For it is written, [nothing shall separate vs from the loue of God, that is in Christ Iesus our Lord, Rom. 8. 38. Ergo, no outward impediment of good workes.

Here vnto wee make answere. That this argument is a *sophisticall* cauillation; which proues that which wee doe not deny. They say that a man regenerate, hath *sufficientia principia rectæ & honestæ operationis*. We say so too; confessing that hee is made a good tree, a fruitfull Branch; that hee is enlightened; sanctified, and strengthened by the spirit of God vnto the performance of good workes. Vvee grant that now he is enabled to doe well, who before his *Regeneration* could  
doe

doe nothing saue ill: but the question still remaines, whether now he doe so well, as that he doth nothing ill when he doth best. VVee grant that the *Vine*, which in former time yeelded nothing, but wild grapes, now being transplanted and grafted into the best *Vine*, beares good grapes: but we deny that they are so weete & kindly in euery respect, as not to haue a little relish still of their former wildnesse & sowrenesse. VVherefore our aduersaries doe but trifle with vs to tell vs that man regenerate hath meanes sufficient to doe those workes that be good: this we deny not; but we question whether they haue helpe sufficient to performe any worke so absolutely and perfectly good; that God himselfe cannot charge it with any sinne at all. This wee constantly deny. And to their discourse, (*That a Regenerate man hath sufficient knowledge, power and will to doe good perfectly*) in this they affirme more then will euer bee proued. Our imperfections in euery one of these three particulars witnessed to our conscience by *Scripture and experience* doth disable vs euer from doing any worke entirely and totally good. Knowledge we haue: but much darkned by ignorance. We haue a will to doe good: but that also corrupted with much froward Rebellion. A power we haue to doe good: but alwaies crossed and much restrained by manyfold Lusts within, and Temptations without vs. How is it possible for vs, being compassed about with so many infirmities: but wee should offend in one thing or other, *Beccanus* here brings vs an instance of a good worke: and bids vs shew what sinne there is in it *If* (saith he) *A man regenerate read or heare these words of Christ. Mat. 6. [giue almes] he being enlightened knowes that this is a worthy and honest worke. Whereupon he is touched in heart and stirred up to doe it. Hee consents to this motion, and resolves upon the execution, which*

(supposing that hee be rich) nothing now can hinder but he is both able and willing to giue. Now then this almeing thus giuen out of knowledge, and a pious motion] of heart tending to Gods honour and our neighbours good. Iesuite desires to know of vs, where there is any sinne i Wee say there is some euill in euery good worke & therefore hee would haue vs tell him what euill there is in *Almesdeed*. Vnto this we say, that this enquiry of the *suite* is the most ridiculous and absurd thing that can be asketh vs where is the sinne? What if we answered him *doe not know*; Is he now euer the wiser? What hath beened thereby? Are other mens worke without all fault cause we know not what they bee? Nay, are they without fault, because themselves know not whether there bee within them: or no? What fillinesse were it to argue in fort? Therefore when wee come to this point strictly to amine the workes of men. First wee tell the *Iesuite* that must not *put cases touching generalities* [*suppose that / good worke bee done so and so what then*] wee dispute touching particulars in euery *Mans reall practise*. The enquiry is not for the generall. (*what euill is there in / such a good worke*) *done thus and thus, according to the circumstances are framed in an imagined case*. As to aske sinne is therein an almes-deede done out of *Faith and rity to Gods glory*. This is a fond question thus framed: generall termes we say there is no sinne in it. But the enquiry is in particular, what euill there is in such a worke done by this or that man, according to all circumstances that were at that time incident to the worke, as, *what was there in Zachew or Cornelius almes-deeds*? This que we admit and answer to it, that some sinne there was which those holy men, as well as others, would not

beene willing that God should enter into iudgement with  
 them, strictly to iudge them. Yea, but will the Iesuites reply,  
 name what sinne this was; or else you wrong them. Now  
 this is meere impudency. For who is iudge of their actions?  
 Are wee? Or is it God and their owne *Conscienc*s? wee  
 can be no iudges, who at furthest can iudge but according  
 to outward appearance. We know not their *Hearts*: nor are  
 we priuy vnto euery particular circumstance, that did ac-  
 company those actions of theirs. Circumstances in euery  
 particular action differ infinitely, one man may offend  
 in this point, another in that: nor haue wee a *generall rule*  
 whereby to iudge alike of all. And therefore it is a childish  
*quere* to aske one man whether another man offends, who  
 may doe euill a 1000 times, not only *secret* from others, but  
*vn*mitting to himselfe. If then the *Iesuite* will haue an an-  
 swere to his question, hee must resort to particular mens  
 Consciencs, and to God: for only the *spirit* of Man, and  
 the *spirit* of God knowe the things of Man. Let him aske  
 a *Cornelius* when he giues almes, whether hee doe thinke  
 this worke so well done, that no fault can bee found with it.  
 Doubtlesse he will answeere, that he cannot excuse himselfe  
 from all faultinesse: though hee knew nothing by himselfe,  
 yet he dares not stand to Gods iudgement. His confession  
 and prayer would in this case be the same with *Nehemiahs*.  
*Nehem. 13. 22.* [*Remember mee O my God concerning this*  
*also, and spare me according to the Greatnesse of thy mercy.*]  
 at once begging fauourable acceptance of his obedience, &  
 rarious pardon of his infirmities. If this suffice not in the  
 ext place, the *Iesuite* is to repaire to God almighty and  
 uestion him, wheres the *sinne* in such & such a *good worke*,  
 'ho no doubt can shape him an answer that will soone  
 rfound his *pride and folly*, and make it quickly appeare

vnto him, that sinfull man, when he pleades with God, is not able to answere him one obiection of a 100, that God shall make against him.

This of the third argument. That man hath sufficient meanes to doe well and not sinne. The last followes, drawne from such absurdities, as they say doe follow vpon our Doctrine. Thus.

4. *If (say they) our doctrine bee true that the best workes of men be sinfull: then these absurdities be likewise true doctrine. That to be iustified by faith is to be iustified by sinne. That no man ought to beleue, because the worke [Beleuing] is sinne. That all good workes are forbidden, because all sinne is forbidden. That God should command vs to commit sinne: because hee commands vs to doe good workes. That God bidding vs be zealous of good workes, should in effect bid vs be zealous of mortall sinne. That to pray for the pardon of sin were a damnable sinne. These and such other absurd positions would be true: if the Protestants doctrine concerning the sinfulness of good workes may stand for good.*

Herevnto wee answere. That these absurdities issue not out of our Doctrine, but out of our aduersaries malicious *Imaginations*. Who like the raging Sea casting vp mire and Dirt from its owne bottome, would faine throw all this filth in the face of the *Reformed Churches*, to make them odious and hatefull to the world. The best is, Truth cannot bee disgraced though it may be belyed. These foule absurdities touch vs not: but follow vpon that Doctrine which is none of ours. Namely, *That the good workes of the Regenerate are in their very nature altogether sinne, and nothing else but sordes, inquinamenta, & mera iniquitates.* Such an  
absurd

absurd assertion would indeed yeeld such an absurd consequence. But we defended it not : and they abuse vs grossly, when in their writings they report of vs the contrary that we doe maintaine. This onely wee teach. *That mens good workes are in part sinfull.* Much good they haue in them: but withall some euill mingled therewith. Amongst the gold some drosse also will be found, that will not bee able to abide the fire of Gods seuerer triall. Imperfections will appeare in our best workes, so long as humane infirmity and mortality hangs vpon vs. This we teach, and from this doctrine all that haue reason, may see that no such vnreasonable conclusions can be collected. And let thus much suffice for the clearing of this third *Proposition*, touching the imperfection of our obedience to the *Morall Law of God*, euen in the *good workes* which we performe. From whence every godly heart should learne both *Christian humilitie* and also *Industrie*. First, *Humility* not to boast in the flesh & glory in its owne *Righteousnesse*, thinking that God must highly account of, and reward largely, that which is very little worth. Secondly, *Industry* in a faithfull indeauour after perfection. That what cannot be done well as it ought, may yet every day be done better then before it was.

## CHAP. IV.

*Three generall exceptions against the truthe delivered in this third Section.*



Hus we haue stood long in the confirmation of our second Argument, touching the *impossibility of Mans fulfilling of the Law* in this life, and so consequently of *iustification by the Law*.

Against all that haue beene said for the prooffe of this point; our Adversaries haue three *Common* and *Generall* Exceptions.

*Exceptions.* Which are these.

Bel. 1. 4. c. 17.  
or *passim alibi*

- 1 That concupiscence or naturall corruption in the first and second act of it, is not sinne.
- 2 That imperfection in our charity and obedience is no sinne.
- 3 That smaller faults, or (as they call them) *Veniall sins*, doe not hinder the iustice & goodnesse of any good worke.

*Except.*

To these three *Positions* they haue continually recourse. For whereas they cannot deny; but that there is in the *Regenerate*; both a pronesse of nature vnto euill, and also many inordinate *sinfull motions* arising thence: they first deny, that either these *Naturall corruptions*, or *disordered motions* of the heart be any *sinnes*.

Again, they confesse that no man hath such perfect love of God and Man; but that he may increase in *charity*: nor be his good workes so perfectly good; but that they ought still to strue to doe them better: but then here also they deny, that this imperfection of our charity and good workes, is any sinne.

Lastly, they grant that no man can avoid *veniall sinnes*, scarce in the best workes he doth: but then they deny that *veniall sinnes* be contrary to the Law, so that albeit a man commit them, yet he may perfectly fulfill the Law of God. I cannot stand largely in the refutation of these foule errors. The confutation whereof belongs properly to the *Article of remission of sinnes*; where the nature and kindes of sinnes are to bee handled. For this present I shall touch on them briefly, and proceed to the matter.

*Conclusion*

- 1 For the first; we defende this *conclusion*.

*The vitious inclination and pronesse of nature vnto euill, as also the inordinate motions of concupiscence which*



*which goe before consent, they are finnes euen in a man regenerate.*

That the inclination and pronenesse of nature to sinne is a sinne, we proue thus. 1

It is expressly so called by the Apostle, *Rom. 7.* not once nor twice: but almost in euery verse of the Chapter. *I am carnall sold vnder sinne. The sinne that dwelleth in me v. 17. 20. The law of sinne, vers. 23. 25.* In it selfe it is sin, & deserues the wages of sinne, eternall death. For which cause the Apostle there calls it. *The body of this death, vers. 24.* Because this inward corruption (which is like a body that hath many members consisting of diuerse euill affections spreading themselves throughout his whole nature) made him lyable vnto eternall death, from which only Gods mercy in Christ could deliuer him.

2 To rebell against the Law is sinne. *Ergo,* To haue a rebellious inclination is sinne likewise. For if the act be euill, 2  
Iam. 3. 12. 13 the habit must needs be naught: if the Law forbid one; it Iam. 4. 8. must needs forbid the other. If it be euill to break any Com- Clenſe your hands: purg your hearts. mandement in act: is it not euill to haue a pronenesse and readinesse of minde to breake it? The habit denominateth a man sinfull and not the act. Nor doth God lesse abhorre the pronenesse of man to offend him: then wee doe abhorre the rauinous disposition of a Wolfe, though it be a Cubb, not yet vsed to the prey, or one tied vp in a chaine, and kept from rauening.

The euill motions of the heart without consent be finnes. 2

1 They are forbidden in the Morall Law. In the tenth Commandement. *Thou shalt not couet.* For motions with consent are forbidden in the other Commandements. As appeares manifestly in *Christs* exposition of the Commandements. *Mat. 5. 22.* where not only the outward act of A- 1

dultery: but the inward desire is also forbidden; if wee be-  
lieue *Christ* the best *interpreter* of the Law: When *Ergo*  
the tenth Commandment forbids *coueting* [of our neigh-  
bour wife, it either meanes the same kinde of lusting, with a  
needlesse *Tautology*: or a different, *viz.* that which is not  
consented vnto. Nor can our Adversaries shift this off:  
though *Becanus* most impudently denies it, without any  
reason of his so doing.

Tom. 2. p. 885.

2

2 We proue it thus. Whatsoever is inordinate and re-  
pugnant to the right Reason: that is sinne.

But these motions without consent be inordinate. ---  
*Ergo* they be sinne, the *Minor* is confessed. That these mo-  
tions be *inordinati & reſtationi repugnantes*.

Marke them  
that walke dis-  
orderly,  
*ἀτακτοι*, i.e.  
sinfull, other-  
wise accor-  
ding to the  
Law.

The *Major* is apparant. For what is *Ordo & recta Ratio*  
*in Moralibus*: but that course of doing any thing, which is  
conformable to Gods Law and his will. God is the God of  
order. His Law is the *rule of order* in all *humane actions*. *Re-*  
*ſtatio* what is it; but the *conformity of mans understanding*  
and will vnto Gods will, which only is the *rule of righte-*  
*ousnesse*; Wee neuer purpose and will matters *aright*: but  
when we will them agreeably to Gods will. Wherefore it  
is a grosse absurdity to deny the *sinfulnesse* of these disor-  
derly motions: seeing no man can breake those orders  
which God hath made, and yet be faultlesse. Nor is it possi-  
ble a man should doe that which is contrary to Gods will:  
And yet bee without sinne in doing of it. These motions  
then without consent bee *confusions in nature*, *opposites* to  
the *righteousnesse* of the will of God; and vnto that euen &  
ſtreight order expresse in his Law.

Wee conclude then that *Concupiscentie* and inordinate  
motions of the Soule not consented vnto, are *Sinnes* contra-  
ry to our Adversaries assertion.

They

They bring some reasons to proue they are not.

- 1 *Originall sinne is taken away in Baptisme. But con-* 1. *Arg. ad-*  
*cupiscence is not taken away in Baptisme, as appears*  
*by experience in the Regenerate, in whom it re-*  
*maines. -- Ergo, concupiscence and pronenesse to sinne*  
*is no sinne.*

This Argument is frivolous. In *Originall sinne*, there are two things, first, *the guilt*. Secondly, *the inherent corruptions*. Wee say in *Baptisme* the *guilt* is altogether washed away from the *Baptized Ele&*, by the blood of *Christ*. And soe the *corruption* thereof, it is in part done away by the *sanctifying spirit of Christ*, powred out vpon the *Regenerate*, which by degrees purgeth out the inherent *sinfulnesse* of nature, by replanting the *graces of Sanctification* in all parts. Concupiscence then, notwithstanding *Baptisme* remains in the *Regenerate*, & is a sinne in them, the guiltinesse whereof God mercifully pardons in *Christ*.

- 2 *What is not in our power to avoid: that God doth not* 2. *Arg. ad-*  
*forbid vs by his Law.*

*But tis not in our power to avoid the motions of the heart that preuent reason and consent. Ergo, they be no sinnes forbidden vs.*

To this we answere. The *Maior* is true in things meerely *Naturall*, that fall out by the *Necessity* of nature well disposed. So we say, Gods Law were vncouth, should hee command a man neuer to be an hungry or thirst, which things he cannot avoid, but they come vpon him, will hee, nill hee; by the meere necessity of nature. But concerning inordinate motions, there's no such matter. God hath laid no such necessity on nature in her creation: but wee by our sinne haue brought it vpon our selues.

Now such a necessity excuses vs not, In this case it helps

a man no more to say. [ *I cannot auoid euill thoughts & desires.* ] then it doth a desperate sinner, that by continuance hath hardened himselfe in euill courtes; or then it helps the Diuells and the damned, if they should say, *We cannot chuse but doe euill.*

3. Arg. adv.

- 3 *They argue thus. That which would haue beene naturall and without fault in man, if hee had beene created, in puris Naturalibus; that is, no sinne nor fault in vs. But motions preuenting consent, would be naturall, and without fault in men so made. Ergo, In vs they be no faults in themselves.*

Here our Adversaries haue made a man of white Paper, or the like to *Materia prima*: that hath not any quality in himmorally good or bad. That is, a man that hath neither the Image of God in *knowledge, righteousness, and holiness*, engrauen on his *understanding, will, affections*, and whole person; nor yet, though it haue it not, hath in him any contrary euill *quality*, that comes vpon him by reason of such a defect. Now of such a *Wiseaker* they dispute. If God had created a man thus, *in puris naturalibus*, neither good nor bad, then. What then? As the old word is. *If the Heauens fall we shall haue Larkes good cheape.* Suppositions framed by our imaginations touching what might bee done, are vaine and needlesse when we see what is done. This we see that man was created in Gods image, inuested with all *Real Qualities* of *Righteousnesse* and *Holinesse*. This wee see also, that man being fallen is borne in *Originall corruption*, depriued of Gods image, and therevpon depraued in his whole nature by *sinfull infirmity*. Wherefore a man in his pure *Naturals*, one that hath neither *Grace*, nor *Corruption*, was neuer found in this world: yea, 'tis a contradiction to imagine a man thus naked without his *Qualities*; that hee hath

hath *Reason*, but neither enlightned, nor darkned, a will but meerey indifferent, neither inclined to good, or euill; affections, but neither vertuously, nor vitiously disposed. In a word, that he is a man capable of *Vertue*, or *Vice*; *Holinesse*, or *sinfulnesse*, and yet hath neither. That were to make a man little better then an *vnreasonable Beast*. But to follow them a little. Suppose a man were made in his pure *Naturals*, would such disorderly motions be found in him? Yea, say they, and that boldly, *Si homo crearetur à Deo in puris naturalibus, procul dubio constaret duabus partibus repugnantibus, Spiritu & Carne: & haberet duos appetitus contrarios, Rationalem & Sensitivum; ergo naturaliter haberet quosdam motus repugnantes Rationi*. Without doubt the *Iesuite* is deceived in this his imagination, and his Argument is not worth a Button. A man in his pure naturalls should haue two parts, a Soule and a body, *Spirit* and *flesh*; hee should haue two appetites, *Reasonable* & *Sensuall*, ergo, these parts in their motions and desires would bee contrary one to the other. This consequent is false. They would be diuerse, not opposite and repugnant. The Body & the *Sensitiues* would lead a man to those things that are agreeable to the body. The *Soule* and reasonable *appetite*, or will would incline him to those higher and more noble objects agreeable to the *Soule*. But neither of these inclinations would crosse & trouble one another, the inferiour *faculties*, like the lower *Spheares* would moue differently from the *superiour*: but yet most orderly according to their owne nature, without impeaching the motions of the other. Each faculty in it's place would worke orderly in sweet harmony and agreement each with other, had not *Sinne* brought in *confusion* and *discord* into the world, as betweene God and man: so betweene man and himselfe. This wee further make good

Becan. Tom. 2.  
tract. 4. cap. 4.  
quest. 1. sect. 25.

by this argument. Whatsoever is naturall, and so without blame in the Man: that *Christ* tooke on him. --- But these inordinate motions of the *sensitiue appetite*, repugnant vnto *will* and *Reason*; *Christ* took not on him--- *Ergo* they are not naturall, and without blame. The *Major* wee proue by that, *Phil. 3. 7. He was made like vnto man*: and *Heb. 2. 17. In all things it behoued him to bee made like vnto his Brethren*. And againe, *Chap. 4. 15. Wee haue not a high Priest which cannot be touched with a feeling of our infirmities: but was in all things tempted in like sort: yet without sinne*. Whence 'tis manifest that *Christ* taking on him our nature, tooke on him all the properties of our nature, and with all such infirmities of our nature as are not sinfull in themselves, or the effects or punishments of *Sinne* in vs. If therefore it be naturall vnto Man, -that the motions of the *sensitiue appetite* should prevent and be repugnant vnto *Reason*, and that this is no *Sinne* except consent make it so: then certainly *Christ* had in him such motions and inordinate desires. But to affirme that, there were in *Christ* such disorderly motions of his inferiour faculties, repugnant vnto his *Reason* and *will*, is a blasphemie against the *immaculate Lambe of God*. *Christ* was indeed tempted (as the text saith) and in like sort as we are: but will any man here vnderstand this of inward *Temptations* arising from any thing within *Christ*, as if hee were like vnto vs drawne aside with <sup>b</sup> *Concupiscence* and inticed, the motions of his sensitiue faculties, inclining him to that which was contrary to his vnderstanding and will? Wee confesse that he was fiercely tempted by *Satan* and wicked men from without: but that he was tempted by any thing in himselfe, by disorderly motions of his heart tending vnto *evill*, and *ergo* checked by his will and reason, this wee account an abominable error touching the *spotlesse humanity*

*2 Tim. 1. 14.*

of our *Sauour*. Wherein we deny, that there euer was a y the least disorderly desire, thought, word, or work what-euer. And therefore wee conclude, that such motions are not *naturall* vnto men, becomming sinfull only by accident, because they are consented vnto: but they are *accidentall* vnto him, being the fruit of *originall corruption*, and are in iemselues *verily* and properly *Sinnes*.

For *Conclusion* Of this point, let vs heare that *Argument* 4 Arg. Bell. which Bell. makes.

- 4 *Where there is no law, there is no sinne. Rom. 4.10.* Lib. 4. cap. 11.  
*But there is no Law prescribed vnto sense and sensuall appetites. Ergo The motions thereof are not sinfull.*

The *Maior* wee grant. The *Minor* he proues because the *Law* presupposed *Reason* in all that whereto it is giuen. But the *sensitiue* part of man is without reason, and ergo not capeable of a *Law*, according as it is in brute beasts, to whom ergo no *Law* is giuen. This hee further proues by that place, *Rom. 7.20.* Now if I doe that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, But sinne that dwelleth in mee. Where 'tis plaine (saith Bell.) that the *Apostle* did not sinne, because he lusted against his will. 'Twas not he did the worke: but 'twas the sin in him. Wherefore he saith afterward. That in his mind, i. e. in his superior faculties hee serued the *Law* of God: and kept it: although in his flesh, i. e. sensitiue appetite and inferior faculties he serued the *Law* of sinne: yet, for all that he sinned not in so doing, because sinne cannot be but in the minde, and the law is not giuen to those faculties that be unreasonable.

To this wee answere. That God giues no law to vnreasonable Creatures, but such as haue *Reason*. The *sensitiue* faculties of brute-beasts haue no other Rule then *Natures*

instinct, which guides and moderates their severall motions in due order and measure. But in man those inferior faculties how euer *unreasonable*, are yet capeable of *Reasons Government*, which according to Gods Law prescribes vnto the motions of the *sensitive appetite* their measure and bounds, beyond which they may not passe. If a man were vncorrupt, the appetite would obey this rule of Reason and keepe it selfe within those prescribed bounds. But being now corrupt by sinne, it breakes out beyond this compassse and overbeares *Reason and will*, which in their sinfull weaknesse are not able to bridle these unruly motions. Wherefore when *Bell.* saith. *That the law is given to the reasonable will, not to the sensitive appetite*; it is utterly false; Because in man it is capeable of government, and so subject to the Law. Our *Reason* hath euen in this our corrupted estate a ciuill command ouer our appetite & affections; so that it can moderate them by faire perswasions now and then. That which it can doe sometimes, it ought to doe alwaies, and if any affections can obey reason at sometimes, were they not infected with *sinne*, they would doe it at all times. And if they doe well when they obey, certainly they doe euill when they disobey. And *ergo* such motions of them, as are repugnant to right reason, are nothing but *rebellion* against Gods Law. As to the place in the 7. *Rom.* we answere. That that interpretation of it which *Bell.* brings is most peruerse and against all sense. The Apostle complaines that he did the Euill, which he would not; no doubt in so doing he did *sinne*. But what is it now which committed this guilt or sinne? *It is not I that doe it saith the Apostle: but that sinne that dwelleth in mee.* That is, according to *Bell.* not I in my mind, or superior faculties of *Reason and will*: but my inferior appetite and affections which doe



Doe this euill against my consent. So the meaning shall bee  
*Concupiscence* in that duell in the Apostle committed sinne:  
 but the *Apostle* himselſe committed it not. Which is very ab-  
 ſurd. As if a *Cholericke man* hauing done a miſchiefe in his  
 anger ſhould ſay, it were not he did it; but his raging paſſi-  
 on: or an *adulterer*, that 'twas not hee committed the ſinne;  
 but his ſinfull affection that carried him further then *reaſon*  
 would. So that if God will puniſh ſuch a ſinne; hee muſt  
 not puniſh him: but only his ſenſitiue *appetite* which was in  
 fault. That is ridiculous, for beſides that it croſſeth the *Ro-  
 miſh* Doctrine manifeſtly; in teaching that ſuch diſorderly  
 motions of the *ſenſitiue appetite* be no ſinnes, which here  
 the *Apoſtle* contradicts, ſaying plainely (*that the ſinne  
 which dwells in him did doe the euill hee would not.* viz. *Sin*)  
 it drawes after it this groſſe error. *That ſome faculty in man  
 may ſinne, and yet the man not ſinne himſelſe.* Wherefore  
 the Apoſtle in that ſpeech. *'Tis not I doe it: but ſinne in mee,*  
 doth not oppoſe one faculty againſt the other, the *reaso-  
 nable will*, againſt the *ſenſitiue appetite*, ſeeking for a ſhift to  
 excuſe his ſinne, by putting it off from himſelſe, to that  
 which was not capable of *Sinne*: but he oppoſeth *grace* in  
 euery *facultie* to *Corruption* in the ſame facultie; as two con-  
 trarie *Principles* and *cauſes* of his *actions*, one mouing to  
 good; the other enclining to bad. Thence the Apoſtle ſaith,  
 that (when he doth euill) *'tis not I that doe it.* i. e. I regenerate  
 according to the Grace, that dwelleth in me, for that in-  
 clines me to doe good: but 'tis *the Sinne dwelling in mee*  
 which (when I would doe well) inclines mee to doe euill.  
 He heere ſhewes the *roote*, whence this euill comes: but yet  
 he doth not put off the fault from himſelſe. As 'tis himſelſe  
 doth well: ſo 'tis himſelſe doth ill too, according as hee con-  
 cludes. verſe 25. *Then I my ſelſe.* i. e. *I my ſelſe doe both well &*

ill; well, according to grace, *in my minde* that is regenerate part both of inferior and superior faculties. *I serue the Law of God* but ill according to corruption remaining in mee: *but in my flesh*, the vnregenerate part, *the Law of Sinne*. Much more might bee added: but 'tis not my purpose, here to enter vpon the common place at large.

I proceed to the second question of our aduersaries, who teach that *albeit our loue of God be imperfect: yet this imperfection is not sinne in vs*. They grant. That no man hath any grace of the *spirit*: but hee may encrease in it daily, that the loue of God and our Neighbours may still grow on to farther degrees of affection; that no grace, nor good worke hath that full perfection, which it might haue in this life, or which wee shall attaine vnto in Heauen. But they deny this defect to be any fault or sinne.

2 Exception.  
Bell. lib. 4. cap.  
10. & 17.  
& cap. 20.

2. *Defectus Charitatis quod (viz.) non facimus opera nostra tanto seruiore detectionis, quanto facimus in patria; defectus quidem est: sed culpa & peccatum non est.* saith Bell. and againe *Charitas nostra quamuis comparata ad Charitatem beatorum, sit imperfecta: tamen absolute perfecta dici potest.*

This is an error against which wee defend this Conclusion in generall, touching both charity and all mans Righteousnesse.

Conclusion.  
contr.

*The defects or want of perfection in mans Righteousnesse is Sinne.*

For the prooffe of this point wee are to obserue, that the Imperfection, or Perfection of any thing is to bee considered of two waies.

1 *Comparatiuely*. When any thing set by another is more or lesse perfect, then that other.

2 *Absolutely*. When considered in it selfe, it hath or wantes

wantes that *perfection* which it should have by its proper Nature.

Betweene these three is great difference. For Comparatiue imperfection is not euill: absolute imperfection is euill. Wee may see it in an example. The senses that are in man being compared with their like in other creatures, tis manifest they are much excelled by them, as by an Eagle for sight, a spider for touch, &c. Here wee say that the eye of a man is not so perfect as the eye of an eagle: but yet wee doe not account this imperfection any *Naturall euill* of the eye of a man. God might haue ginen a stronger and a clearer sight to men: but wee, blame not his workes; nor count our sight imperfect because it hath not that singular temper which is in other *Creatures*; but because it wants at any time that temper which is agreeable to our nature. Such a defect only, is properly an euill in nature, when something is wanting to the perfection of any part, which by the course of nature should be there. Thus tis also in Grace. Compare we the *Righteousnesse* of man, or *Angels*, with the *Righteousnesse* of God; we saie that God is *infinitely* more perfect then the *Creatures*. But now is this *imperfection in humane or Angelicall righteousness* any euill and Sinne in them? We say no. Neither are the *Angels* sinfull because lesse righteous then God: nor *Adam* sinfull because lesse righteous then either. God made them both lesse good then himselfe: yet *very good*; and without all sinne. There be degrees of *Righteousnesse*, and though the creature bee infinitely below the highest pitch of *goodnesse* (which is God:) yet he may be still aboue that lowest descent vnto *sin* and *unrighteousnesse*. In *Philosophie* wee dispute whether the slackening of any degree in one *Quality*, bee the mingling of another that is *contrary*. As heat in eight degrees

if it decrease vnto seauen, whether there is any degree of cold mingled with it. 'Tis hard to say that there is. But concerning *Grace* and *Righteousnes* 'tis certaine, there is that *remissio graduum* without any admixtion of *Sinne* & *iniquity*. As the *Holinesse* of *Saints* is lesse then that of *Angels*; that of *Angels* lesse then the *Holinesse* of *Christs* glorified *Humanity*, this lesse then his *Deity*. And yet in the least of these *Righteousnesse* there is no *unrighteousnesse* at all to be found, no not in the seuerer iudgement of *God*. Except we say there is *unrighteousnesse* in *Heauen* where no vncleane thing can enter. Well then. What Imperfection of mans righteousnesse is it, which is *Sinne*? We say. That *Imperfection*; when man in any *Grace* or good worke wants that degree of goodnesse, which hee ought to haue. As in nature. If the eye want the cleerenesse of sight which should be in it: 'tis a naturall euill. *Immorality* if a man want that *Temperance* or degree of *Temperance* hee ought to haue, is a *vitious* and morall euill: so in *Grace* the want of that *righteousnesse* or degree of *Righteousnesse* which *God* requires to be in man, is a *Sinne* and *spirituall* euill. All such *primations* of what should be present are euill in what kind soeuer. If they be in nature they be *mala miseranda*; deserue pitty and cure: if in *Vertue* and *Grace*; they bee *mala culpanda* worthy of blame and punishment. Such defects as these in *Grace*, when man falls short; not only of that which is in others; but that which should be in himselfe, doe alwaies arise from the mixture of *Corruption* and *sinne*. He that loues not *God* or his neighbour so much as hee ought to doe: 'tis because his heart is wicked, at the least in part; and that hee loues other things more then he should doe. These things are certaine and vdeniable according to those words of *S<sup>t</sup> Augustine* that are authenticall. *Profecit illud quod minus est*

*est quam debet, ex vitio est.* And againe, <sup>b</sup> *Peccatum est, vel cum non est charitas, quae esse debet: vel minor est quam debet.* 'Tis a sinne, not to loue God at all: or to loue him lesse then we should. Wherefore here wee aske the *Iesuite* whether *Charity* & other *Graces* in a man regenerate bee so perfect in this life, as they ought to be? If he say, they be not so perfect, as they ought to bee, how can hee affirme that this defect is no fault nor *Sinne*: Can a man possibly doe worse, or be worse then he should; and yet be in no fault therefore? If he say they be as perfect as they should be, his owne *Conscience* and the *Conscience* of all the men in the *World* will gain-say him for a liar. No man can say, that he loues God and his neighbour as much as he ought to doe: and that he is not bound in euery *grace* and *good worke* to aime at greater perfection, then he hath for the present. Hee that thinkes himselfe come nearest vnto the marke, will yet be driuen to confesse, that he falls many bowes short of those patternes which he ought to imitate, *Adam* in his *Innocency*; *Christs Humanity*, and the *Saints in Heauen*. Wee here bid them (*Depinge ubi sistam*) make a point where wee shall stoppe: that when wee are come so farre, wee need seeke no further perfection. If they cannot doe this, then they must confesse, as the truth is, that euery man is bound by Gods command to be more holy, to bee more perfect in all *Grace* and *good workes*; and so farre as hee wants any degree or degree of goodnesse, that should be in him and his workes, so farre he is sinfull and guilty of a fault:

3 I goe on to the last *Affertion* of our aduersaries, which is touching *veniall finnes*, (*viz.*) That these doe not hinder the righteousness of mens good workes. A man may be a perfect iust man, though he commit many veniall finnes. The reason whereof they make to be [because veniall finnes are not

3 Exception  
Bell. li. 6. 17.  
contrary

contrary to charity, the loue of God and our neighbour, and so may stand well enough with the fulfilling of the Law.]

Against this error, tending to the obduration of mans heart in impenitency and loue of sinne : wee maintaine this conclusion.

Conclusion  
contr.

Those sinnes which the Church of Rome calls veniall, doe truly make a man regenerate, & his workes vnrigheteous in the sight of God.

This wee proue by this one argument.

Whosoever transgresseth the Law he is vnrigheteous in so doing.

But hee that commits veniall sinnes, transgresseth the Law. Ergo, He that commits veniall sinnes is an vnrigheteous man.

Lib. 4. cap. 14.

The Maior is vndeniable. For the Minor our aduersarie is at a stand. They are loath to grant it: yet cannot tell how to deny it with any honesty. Bellarmine after one or two shuffling distinctions of *simpliciter*, & *secundum quid*, *perfecte* and *imperfecte*, at last plainly denies that veniall sinnes be contrary to the Law. For answering vnto those places in Iames. [In many things wee offend all.] and that in Iohn. [If we say we haue no sinne, we deceiue our selues.] He saith they cannot handsomely shift themselves of those places, who hold that veniall Sinnes be [proprie contra legem.] Such as bee of that opinion [Let them looke to it (saith hee) what they will answere to that of Saint Iames.] He that keepes the Law in one point, &c.] He therefore will be more wise and wary. [Solida igitur responsio est (saith hee) Peccata venialia, sine quibus non viuuntur, non esse peccata simpliciter, sed imperfecte & secundum quid: neque esse contra Legem, sed prater legem.] And thus saith he, Omnia coherent (like Pebbles in a wihe) [Nam qui offendit in uno,

pru4.

*prauaricans scilicet vnum praeceptum, reus est omnium, & simpliciter iniustus constituitur & tamen in multis offendimus omnes, quia tametsi nihil facimus contra legem; tamen multa facimus prae ter legem. Et qui natus est ex Deo, non peccat transgrediendo legem, & tamen si dicamus quia peccatum non habemus. (viz.) nihil prae ter legem faciendo: nos ipsos seducimus, & veritas non est in Nobis.]*

Other meaning of these words (against) & (besides) there can be none given.

This is an vnbound Besome, as will appeare by vndoing that distinction which seemes to hold it together. *Veniall sinnes* are not against the law: but besides the law. Well, we must now know what is against the Law, & what besides. That is against the Law, when any thing is done which the Law forbids; or left vndone which it commands. That is besides the Law, when the thing done is neither commanded, nor forbidden in the Law. Hee then that commits a *veniall sinne*, doth some such act as the Law neither forbids nor commands. Here then we aske. Bee *veniall sinnes*, *sinnes*? Yea, they be. Is God offended with them? Yea, and hee may iustly punish them on vs with the losse of heauen. For so *Bellarmino* him selfe confesseth. [*Peccata venialia nisi misericorditer remittantur impediunt ab ingressu illius Regni in quod nihil coinquinatum intrare potest.*] Now sure this is admirable, that such acts as these should defile a man, deserue hell, offend God, in a word be sinnes, and yet for all this neither commanded nor forbidden in any law of God. Was there euer such a toy heard of as this? As *sins* beside the Law. Tis a most ridiculous contradiction, *Peccatum prae ter Legem*. Hee that doth any thing beside the law, not mentioned, nor included therein by way of prohibition or command, tis most apparent he sinnes not, nor offends not at all. For whom doth he offend, or who can challenge him of

Lib. 4. cap. vi.

T

Sinne?

*Sinne?* Doth God the Law-giuer? No, for twas not his intention to command or forbid such an act, and *ergo*, bee it done or not done, it crosseth not his will: nor hath hee any reason to finde fault or be displeased at it. *Satan* or *Man* cannot accuse him. For let them then shew the Law that proues him an offender. If they cannot alleadge a law against which he hath transgressed: they wrongfully accuse him of a fault. Were it not an absurd accusation against a prisoner at the barre, to say that he hath indeed done nothing against the Lawes of the Land: but many things besides the Law not forbidden nor commanded in the Law, those hee hath done and deserues to be punished for it as an offender?

But now if those *veniall finnes* bee mentioned in Gods Law: then are such actions either commanded or forbidden. If commanded, then the not doing of such a thing, is plainly contrary to the law. As for example. *To steale a penny, or some other small matter, to speake an idle word, to tell an officious lie; these bee Veniall finnes, say our Adversaries.* But how knowe they, they bee *finnes*? Who told them so? The Scriptures they will say. Where? In the 8 & 9 *Commandement.* Aske them now. Did God intend in those *Commandements* to forbid those actions of *stealing* and *lying*? Yea, or no? If he intended it not; then tis no sinne at all to doe them, seeing it crosseth not Gods will, nor offends him. If he did intend to forbid vs those things: then to doe the n is a *sinne*, manifestly contrary to the holy will of God, the Law-giuer. Wherefore let vs here remember that excellent rule of *Bernard.* [*Non iussa quidem licite utrumlibet, vel admittuntur vel omittuntur: iussa vero sine culpa non negliguntur, sine crimine non contemnuntur.* For things not commanded: wee may either lawfully doe them or leaue them: but for things commanded, to neglect them is a sin,

*et uox co-  
cupiscentia sa-  
tiando gratia;*

*Bern. de pra-  
cept. & dispen.*



to contemne them is a haynous crime. Wherefore this distinction of sinnes against, and sinnes beside the Law falleth to dust: and our *Minor proposition* stands firme: That hee who committeth *veniall sinne*, transgresseth the law of God: and therefore is vnrighteous for his so doing.

<sup>a</sup> *Becanus* here forsakes the *Cardinall* in this distinction: and helps him by another devise. Hee grants that *Veniall* <sup>a Tom. 2. tract. 2. cap. 2. q. 2.</sup> sinnes be against the Law, and proues it, [*because euery Veniall sin is moraliter malum, and ergo contra rectam rationem & legem aeternam.*] But heres now the distinction: It is one thing to be *contra legem*, another *contra finem legis*. All Veniall sinnes be against the law: but no veniall sinne is properly against the end of the Law, that is, against *Charity the loue of God* or our *Neighbour*. Is not this a superfine inuention? As if a *Subiect* that hath in many things broken the law, should say. True my faults bee against the law of the land: but yet they are not against the end of those Lawes. *viz.* obedience to my Prince, and leue to the good of him and my country. Though I breake the lawes: yet I would not haue you thinke, but I loue and honour my Prince and Country well enough. Iust so the *Iesuites*. A man may commit many sinnes against Gods law: and yet obserue the end of the law, in louing God with all his heart; and his Neighbour as himselfe. Then which nothing can bee more senselesse that a man should offend God in breaking of his Law: & yet notwithstanding loue God with his whole heart. That a man should wrong his Neighbour doing that to him which he would not haue done to himselfe: and yet, for all that, loue his Neighbour as himselfe. (*If yee loue me keep my Commandements*) saith Christ, John, 14. 15. Nay (say the *Romanists*) we loue him and yet breake his Commandements. (*Loue doth not euill to his neighbour*) saith the Apostle;

*Nauar. Man. confest. prelu. 7. Num. 16.*

*Rom. 13. 10.* Nay (say the *Iesuites*,) loue may doe euill to his neighbour: and yet keepe the name of loue. A man may be angry with another without cause, reuile him, and call him *Rach*, he may defraude him in small matters (for these they make *ueniall finnes*) & yet in the meane time, all this without breach of charity. Himselfe would not willingly bee so vsed: but he will vse another in this sort; and yet looke to be thanked for his loue too. Such grosse absurdities doe our aduersaries runne into, by coining such senselesse distinctions of (*Sinnes not against: but besides the law*) of *sinnes not against the end of the law: though against the law is selfe*. Our consciences cannot be satisfied with such silly shifts: & therefore we leaue them vnto those that can content themselves to choake vp their consciences with a little Sophistry. Men who make a pastime of sinne; and take liberty to qualifye and dispenſe with Gods law as they thinke agreeable to their conscience; hoping by *tricks of wit and dodging Distinctions* to avoid the accusations of conscience, & to elude the *seuerity of Gods iudgement*.

#### SECT. 4. CHAP. I.

*Iustification by works makes void the covenant of grace, of the difference betweene the law and the Gospell, of the use of the law. Of the erroneous conceit of our aduersaries in this point.*

**H**us much of these three exceptions of our second *Argument*, prouing the impossibility of our iustification by the workes of the law, because we cannot perfectly fulfill the law. We goe now forward vnto two Arguments more; taken, the  
one

one from the difference of the two Couenants God hath made with man. First of *workes*, the other of *Grace*: and the other from the nature of true Christian liberty obtained for us by Christs death.

3 Argument. That which makes void the covenant of grace is a false and hereticall doctrine.

But iustification by workes of the law, makes void the covenant of Grace. Ergo, 'Tis false and hereticall so to teach.

For confirmation of the Minor in this Argument wee must briefly shew. 1 (What the Covenant of Grace, what the covenant of workes is) 2 what opposition there is between these two.

By the Covenant of Grace we vnderstand in one word, the *Covenant of Gospel*, i.e. the gracious appointment of God to bring man to *Saluation by Iesus Christ*. In the administration of this gracious purpose of God we must obserue foure periods of time, wherein God hath diuersly ordered this meanes of mans saluation.

1 The first is from *Adam* vntill *Abraham*. Wherein God made the promise to *Adam* anon after his miserable fall: and renewed it as occasion serued vnto the *Patriarches* and *Holy men* of that first age of the world. viz. That (the seed of the woman should breake the Serpents head) This blessed promise containing the whole substance of mans redemption by Christ, was religiously accepted of, and embraced by the seruants of God in those times, who witnessed their faith in it, by their offering of sacrifice as God had taught them: and their Thankfulnesse for it, by their Obedience and holy Conuersation.

2 The second is from *Abraham* to *Moses*. After that men had now almost forgot Gods promise and their owne

duty: and *Idolatry* was crept into those *Families*, wherei-  
 by succession the Church of God had continued, Gad call-  
 forth *Abraham* from amongst his *Idolatrous* kindred, and  
 with him renues that former *promise* in forme of a *Leagu*  
 and *Couenant* confirmed by word & *solemne Ceremonie*  
*God* on the one side promising to be the God of *Abraham*  
 and of his seed, & that in his seed all the nations of the ear-  
 should be blessed: *Abraham* for his part beleeuing the pr-  
 mise, and accepting the condition of obedience to walke  
 fore God in uprightnesse. This *Couenant* with *Abraham* is  
 ratified by two externall ceremonies. One of a fire-brand  
 passing betweene the peices of the Heifer and other Beasts,  
 which *Abraham*, according to the custome in making of  
 Leagues had diuided in twaine, *Gen. 15*. The other the Sa-  
 crament of Circumcision vpon the flesh of *Abraham* and his  
 posterity, *Gen. 17*.

3

The third period is from the time of *Moses* vntill *Christ*.  
 When (after the Church multiplied vnto a Nation, & with-  
 all in proceffe of time, and continuance among the *Idola-*  
*trous Egyptians*, grew extreamely corrupt in Religion and  
*Manners*) God againe reuiues his former *Couenant* made  
 with *Abraham*. Putting the *Iewes* in remembrance of the  
*Couenant* of grace in *Christ*. 1 By adding vnto the first Sa-  
 crament of circumcision another of the *Passenger*, setting  
 forth vnto the *Iewes*, the *Author* of their deliuerance; as  
 well from the spirituall slavery and punishment of sinne; as  
 from the bodily bondage and plagues of *Egypt*. 2 After-  
 wards by instituting diuers Rites and ceremonies concer-  
 ning *Priests sacrifices*, &c. all which were shadowes of good  
 things to come (*viz.*) of *Christ*, the Churches redemption by  
 his death. Which things were prefigured vnder those types  
 though somewhat darkly, yet plainly enough to the weake  
 vnder-

understanding of the *Jewes*. Who in that *Minority* of the Church stood in need of such Schoolmasters and Tutors to direct them vnto Christ.

The fourth period and last is from Christs death, to the end of the world. Who in the fulnesse of time appearing in our flesh, accomplished all the *Prophecies* and *promises* that went before of him: and by the sacrifice of himselfe, confirmed that couenant a new: which so long before had bene made with the Church. Withall having abolished whatsoeuer before was weake and imperfect, hee hath now replenished the Church with abundance of knowledge, & of grace, till to continue and increase, till the consummation of all things. In all these periods of time, the grace of God that brings saluation to man was euer one and the same: onely the Revelation thereof, was with much variety of *circumstances*, as God saw it agreeable to every season. In the first was called a promise, in the second a couenant; in the two last Periods, a *Testament*; the Old from *Moses* till Christs death; the New from thence to the worlds end, in both *Remission of sinnes*, and *saluation* bequeathed as a Legacy vnto the Church: and this bequeast ratified by the death of the *Testator*, typically slaine in the Sacrifices, for confirmation of the Old: Really put to death in his owne *Person*, for the *Sanction* of the *New Testament*. But notwithstanding this or any other diuerſity in *circumstance*, the substance of the *Gospell*, or couenant of *Grace*, is but one & the same, throughout all ages. Namely, *Iesus Christ yesterday, and to day, and the same for euer*.

In the next place. By the *Couenant of workes*, wee vnderstand that we call in one word the Law: Namely, That meanes of bringing man to *Saluation*, which is by perfect obedience vnto the will of God. Hereof there are also two  
Covenant.  
2 Workes.  
seuerall

seuerall administratiōs. 1. The first is with *Adam* before his fall. When *Immortality* and *Happinesse* was promised to man, and confirmed by an externall *Symbole* of the *Tree of life*: vpon condition that he continued obedient to God, as well in all other things; as in that particular Commandement of not eating of the *Tree of knowledge of good and euill*

2. The second administratiō of this couenant was the reuiving thereof with the *Israelites* at Mount *Sinai*: where (after that the light of nature began to grow darker, and corruption had in time worne out the characters of *Religion* and *vertue*, first graued in mans heart) God reuied the law, by a compendious and full declaration of all duties required of man, towards God or his neighbour, expressed in the *Decalogue*. According to the tenor of which law God entred into couenant with the *Israelites*, promising to bee their God; in bestowing vpon them all blessings of life and happinesse, vpon condition that they would be his people, obeying all things that hee had commanded. Which condition they accepted of, promising an absolute obedience. *All things which the Lord hath said we will doe. Exod. 19. 24. &c.* also submitting themselves to all punishment in case they disobeyed; saying *Amen* to the curse of the law. *Cursed bee euery one that confirmeth not all the words of this law to doe them: and all the people shall say Amen. Deut. 27. 26.*

We see in brieft what these couenants of grace & workes are. In the second place wee must enquire what opposition there is betweene these two; *Grace* and *workes*; the *Gospell* and the *Law*. The opposition is not in regard of the end whereat both doe aime. They agree both in one common end, namely the glory of God in Mans eternall saluation. The disagreement is in the meanes, whereby this end may be attained; which are proposed to men in one sort by the *Law*,

another by the Gospell. The diuersity is this. *The Law* offers life vnto man vpon condition of perfect obedience, the transgressors thereof in the least point with eternall death: The Gospell offers life vnto man vpon another condition, *viz.* Of repentance and faith in Christ, promising re-  
of sinnes to such as repent and beleene. That this is the  
Essentiall and proper difference betweene the *Cone-*  
uention workes and of Grace (that is) betweene the Law &  
bell, we shall endeauor to make good against those of  
misb *Apostasy* who deny it. Consider we then the law  
ikes, either as giuen to *Adam* before the promise: or  
the promise it remained in some force with *Adam* &  
posterity. For the time before mans fall, It is apparant  
fect obedience was the condition required for the e-  
ing of *Adam* in perpetuall blisse. Other meanes there-  
t: nor needed any be proposed vnto him. But when  
id failed in that condition; and so broken the *Cone-*  
Workes: God to repaire mans ruined estate, now  
ate of euery attaining vnto happines by the first means:  
oints a second, offering vnto *Adam* a Sauiour; that by  
a him, and not by his owne vnspotted obedience, he  
recouer *Iustification*, and life which he had lost. So  
at *Adam* should haue obtained by workes without  
: now hee shall receiue by faith in Christ without  
es. Since the time of mans fall we must consider, that  
w and *Gospell* though they goe together, yet as they  
fer in their vse and office betweene themselves; so al-  
Law differs from it selfe, in that vse which it had be-  
nd which it had since the fall. To vs now, it hath not  
ne vse which it had in mans innocency. It was giuen  
us for this end, to bring him to life, and for that pur-  
: was sufficient both in it selfe, as an absolute rule of

*Perfection*: and in regard of *Adam* who had strength to haue obserued it. But vnto man fallen, although the band of obedience doe remaine: yet the end thereof (viz.) Iustification & life by it, is now abolished by the promise, because the law now is insufficiēt for that purpose, not of it selfe, but by reason of our sinfull flesh, that cannot keepe it. This is most manifest by the renewing of the first *Couenant* of workes with the *Jewes*, when God deliuered vnto them the Morall Law, from *Sinai*, at which time God did not intend that the *Jewes* should obtaine *saluation*, by obedience to the Law. God promised life if they could obey, and the *Jewes*, as their duty was promised they would obey; but God knew well enough they were neuer able to keepe thier promise, & ergo 'twas not Gods intention in this legall *covenant* with the *Jewes*, that any of them should euer attaine *Iustification*, and life by that meanes. as at first the *Promise* need not to haue beene made vnto *Adam*, if the Law could haue sufficed for the attaining of life: so after the promise was once made, the Law was not renewed with the *Jewes* to that end that *Righteousnesse* and *life* should bee had by the obseruation of it. This is the plaine doctrine of the *Apostle Gall. 3.* in that his excellent dispute against *Iustification* by the Law. The doubt that troubled the *Gallathians* was this. God had made an *Euangelicall covenant* with *Abraham* <sup>a</sup> that in *Christ* he and his faithfull seed should be blessed; that is, *Iustified*. Afterward 430 yeares hee made a *legall covenant* with *Abrahams posterity*, that they should liue, that is, be *iustified* & *saued*, if they did fulfill all things written in the Law. The *Question* now was, which of these two *covenants* should stand in force, or whether both could stand together. The *Apostle* answeres, that the former *covenant* should stand in force, and that the later did not abrogate the former;



nor yet could stand in force together with the former. he expresseth v. 17. 18. *And this I say, that the covenant was confirmed afore of God in respect of Christ, the law was 430 yeares after, cannot disanull that it should the Promise of none effect. For if the inheritance (viz.) righteousness & life, be by the law; it is not by the promise: and gaue it to Abraham by promise, here now they might say, wherefore then serueth the law? If men cannot be justified by keeping the Law, to what end was it giuen so after the Promise was made? To this the Apostle answers. It was added (vnto the promise) because of transgressions. Heres the true vse of the Morall law, since the fall of man, not to iustifie him and giue life: but to proue him to be iust and worthy of death. It was added [because of transgressions] that is. 1. To conuince man of sinne, that he might be put in remembrance what was his duty of old; & what was his present infirmity in doeing of it, and what was the wrath against him for not doeing it. That seeing it was impossible it was for him to attaine vnto life by this way of the Law, first appointed in *Paradise*, he might be led and driuen to looke after that new way, which was laid since that time layed forth, more heedfully attende vnto the *Promise*, and seeking vnto *Christ*, who is the end of the Law vnto every one that beleeueth in him. Which vse was pointed out vnto the Iewes, figuring *Christ* vnto them by the *Mercy seate*, couering the *Arke* wherein the tables of the covenant were kept, and in the *Sacrifices* appointed by the Law, sorts of *Transgressions* against this *Covenant*. To adde vnto the Iewes a further thing was aimed at in giuing the Law, namely the bringing of them to *Christ* the promised seed, in whom remission of sinnes, and Life eternall was to be had. 2. To restraine Man from Sinne.*

That the Law might be a perpetuall rule of Holinesse and Obedience whereby man should walke and glorifie God to the vtmost of his power. That so those *Iewes* might not thinke that God by making a gracious *Promise*, had vtterly nullified the Law, and that now men might liue as they list; but that they might know these bounds prescribed them of God, within which compassie they were to keepe themselves, that so the ouerflowing of *iniquity* might bee restrained. These most excellent, perpetuall and necessary vses of the morall law, God intended in renewing of the *Legall covenant* with the *Iewes*: and *ergo* the *Apostle* concludes, that God did not crosse himselfe, when first he gaue the *inheritance* to *Abraham* by promise, & afterwards made a *Legall covenant* with the *Iewes* his posterity. *Is the law then against the promises* (saith the *Apostle*) *God forbid. For if there had beene a Law giuen, which could haue giuen life, surely righteousness should haue bin by the law: But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ might bee giuen to all that beleue.* verse 21.22.

Vhence it is most cleare that the Law and the Gospell in some things are subordinate and vphold one another; in other absolute, and destroy one another: As the Law by the discouery of sinne and the punishment of it, humbles man & prepares him to receiue the Gospell; 2 As the law is a sacred direction for *Holinesse* and *Obedience* to those that haue embraced the Gospell and all others. 3 As the Law requires *satisfaction* for the breach of it, and the Gospell *promiseth* such *satisfaction*: this the law and Gospell agree well together and establish one another. But as the Law gines life to them that perfectly obey it, and the Gospell gines life to them that stedfastly beleue it: thus the law and Gospell are one against the other, & ouerthrow one another. And *ergo*

if

if God had giuen such a Law to the *Iewes*, as could haue brought *Saluation* to them through the perfect fulfilling of it: 'tis apparent that God had made voide his former covenant vnto *Abraham*, because *Righteousnesse* should haue bin by the law and not by *Christ*. But now God gaue no such Law, as could bee kept by the *Iewes*, as the *Apostle* proues, because all were *sinners* against it; and therefore it followes that notwithstanding the giuing of the Law, the *Promise* standes good for euer; and *Righteousnesse* is to bee obtained onely by the *Faith* of *Iesus Christ*.

From hence wee conclude firmly. That the difference betweene the Law and the *Gospell*, assigned by our *Divines* is most certaine and agreeable to the *Scriptures*. viz. That. *The law giues life vnto the iust vpon condition of perfect Obedience in all things: The Gospell giues life vnto sinners vpon condition, they repent & beleue in Christ Iesus.* Whence it is plaine. That in the point of *iustification* these two are *incompatible*. & that therefore our *minor proposition* standes verified. *That iustification by the workes of the law, makes voide the covenant of Grace.* Which *Proposition* is the same with the *Apostles* assertion else-where. *Gal. 2.21. If righteousness be by the Law Christ died in vaine.* and *Gal. 5.4. Ye are abolished from Christ: whosoever are iustified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.*

By so much more iniurious are these of the *Romish Church* vnto the *Gospell* of *Christ*, when by denying this difference, they would confound the Law and *Gospell*: and bring vs backe from *Christ* to *Moses*, to seeke for our *Iustification* in the fulfilling of the *Morall law*. They would persuade vs that the *Gospell* is nothing, but a more perfect law; or the law perfect by addition of the *Spirit*, enabling men to fulfill it; That the promises of the *Gospell* bee vpon this

1 Cor. 3.

condition, of fulfilling the law, with such like stuffe. Their Doctrine touching this point is declared vnto vs by Bellarmine lib. 4. de iustificat. cap. 3. 4. Where he coines many distinctions betweene the Law & Gospell: but will by no meanes admit of that which our Reformed Diuines make to bee the chiefe. The chiefe distinction which he conceaues to be betweene them he framed thus. *The Gospell* (saith he) *is taken in a double sense. 1. For the Doctrine of Christ, and his Apostles by them preached and written; 2. For the grace of the Holy Ghost giuen in the new testament, which he makes to be the Law written in our hearts, the quickening spirit, the law of faith, charity spread abroad in our hearts, in opposition to the Law written in stone, to the dead and killing Letter, the Law of Workes, the spirit of bondage and feare.* Vpon this hee proceeds to the difference betweene the Law and the Gospell. Thus. *The law teacheth vs what is to be done, the Gospell (if it be taken for the grace of the holy Ghost) so it differs from the Law; because it giues strength to doe it: but if it be taken for the Doctrine deliuered by Christ and his Apostles, so it agrees with the law, teaching vs, as the law doth, what things are to be done.* This argument the Jesuite illustrates and proues in three particulars.

John. 1. 17.

Exod. 20.

I The Gospell containes, *Doctrinam operum, or leges.* For Morall precepts, they be the same in the Gospell that be in the law; euen those precepts that seeme most euangelicall. (viz.) of louing our enimies, witnesse of this all the writings of the new Testament, wherein euery where wee finde precepts and exhortations to the same vertues, Prohibitions and abhorrements from the same vices which the law forbids or commands. So that for Moralls, the Doctrine of the Gospell is but the Doctrine of the law; namely (that is) most cleerely and fully

ly expounded. Nor is the Gospell more perfect in substance: but in circumstance a more perspicuous Doctrine.

Which though a truth, yet is very ridiculously proued by the Cardinall out of *Mat. 5. Nisi abundaueris &c. Vnlesse your righteousness exceed. What?* Hee saith not the righteousness of the law and Prophets: but of the Scribes & Pharisees; yee shall not enter &c. A profound Glosse, (Christ would not adde to the burden of the law: but to take away from the false glosse of the Scribes & Pharisees.) Surely good cause had our Sauour to taxe both the Doctrine of the Pharisees in interpreting, and their manners in their hypocritical practise of the law in outward matters; without inward obedience: But little reason was there that Christ should require of man more perfection then Gods Law required, & 'tis a fancy to dreame of any such meaning, in our sauiours speech.

2. The Gospell containes Comminations, and threatnings as the Law doth Witnesse the many woes from Christs owne mouth against the Scribes and Pharisees; together with those frequent denunciations of iudgement and Damnation to such as are ungodly, that doe not repent and obey the Gospell.
3. Thirdly the Gospell containes promises of Life and happiness: but these Evangelicall promises be not absolute but upon the same condition, that the legall are. (viz.) Cum conditione implenda legis, Cum conditione Iustitia actualis, & operosa, qua in perfecta Mandatorum obseruatione consistit. Cap. 2.

This the Resuite will proue vnto vs.

1. From that *Mat. 5. Vnlesse your righteousness abound &c.* (that is, in Bellarmines Construction) so farre as, vnto the perfect keeping of the Law: you shall not enter into

*into the Kingdome of Heauen.*

- 2 From *Mat. 19. 17. Mark. 10. 19.* Where Christ speaks to the young man, asking him what hee should doe to be saued: *If thou wilt enter into life keepe the commandments.* And to the Lawyer. (*Luke 10. 28.*) who asked the like Question he answers. *This doe and thou shalt liue.* That is. *Fulfill the law and thou shalt be saued.* In which words they say, *That Christ did preach the Gospell, and shewed vnto these men the very Evangelicall way to saluation.*
- 3 From the many places of Scripture. Wherein *Mortification of Sinne, and the studious practise of Holines. & Obedience is required of vs.* As *Rom. 8. If yee mortifie the deeds of the flesh by the spirit, ye shall liue.* So *Ezekiel 18. 21. If the wicked will returne from all his Sinnes, that he hath committed, and keepe all my statutes, and doe that which is lawfull and Right: hee shall surely liue and not die.* With a number such like places.
- 4 From the very tenor of the Gospell. *He that beleeueth shall be saued: but hee that beleeueth not, shall bee damned.* Where wee see the promise of life is not absolute, but conditionall. *If wee doe such and such workes.*

*John. 13. 17. If ye know those things, &c.  
John. 15. 14. Ye are my friends If ye doe whatsoever I command you,*

From hence the Romanist concludes: That seeing the precepts, threatnings, and promises of the Gospell, bee for matter the same, that those of the law are: the true difference betweene the law and Gospell shall bee this. *That the law nakedly proposeth what is to be done without giuing grace to performe it: but the Gospell not only proposeth what is to be done, but withall giueth grace and strength to doe it: and therefore the law giuen by Moses the law-giuer*

giuer cannot iustifie, because it was giuen without the grace of fulfilling it: but the Gospell giuen by Christ the Redeemer doth iustifie, because it is accompanied with the grace of the holy Ghost, making vs able to keepe the law. For which cause also the law of Moses is a yoke unsupportable, the law of a feare and bondage; because it giues not grace to keepe it, but onely conuinceth our sinne, and threatens vs punishment: but the Law of Christ, the Gospell is a light yoke, a law of loue and liberty, because it giues grace to keepe it, and of loue to God and man: and so by fulfilling frees a man from feared punishment.

a Rom. 8. 15.  
Gall. 4. 24. 25.

This is the summe of the Romish Doctrine touching the Difference betwixt the morall law and the Gospell in the point of iustification, as it is deliuered vs by Bellarmine, the rotten pillar of the Antichristian Synagogue. Wherein we haue scarce a syllable of distinct truth: but all perverted by equiuocations and grosse ambiguities, as shall appeare by a short suruey of the former discourse. Whereas then he distinguisheth the Gospell into the doctrine of Christ, & his Apostles, and into the grace of the holy Ghost: let vs follow him in these two parts.

First for doctrine. Wee grant that the Gospell is often so taken: but in this matter about iustification, this acceptance is too large, and not distinct enough. For although, by a *Synecdoche* of the chiefest and most excellent part, the whole doctrine and ministry of Christ and his Apostles with their successours, be called the doctrine of the Gospell, and<sup>b</sup> the ministry of the Gospell: yet all things which they preached or wrote, is not the Gospell properly so called. But as *Moses* chiefly deliuered the law vnto the *Iewes*, though yet with all he wrote of Christ, and so in part reuealed

b Rom. 12. 16.  
At that day  
when God  
shal iudge the  
secrets of men  
by Iesus Christ  
according to  
my Gospell.

led vnto them the Gospell : so Christ and his Ministers, though chiefly they preach the Gospell, yet in its place they vrge the law withall, as that which hath its singular vse in furthering our Christian faith and practise. Wherefore when we speake of the Gospell as opposite to the Law, 'tis a *Iesuiticall equiuocation* to take it in this large sense. For the whole doctrine of Christ and his Apostles, preached by them, and written for vs in the Booke of the new *Testament*, we follow the Apostle in his dispute of iustification, *Gal. 3. 4. 5.* And according as he doth take the Gospell strictly for the promise of iustification & life made vnto man in Christ Iesus. This is in proper termes the Gospell (*viz.*) that speciall doctrine touching mans redemption and reconciliati- on with God by the meanes of Iesus Christ; the Revelation whereof was indeed [*εὐαγγέλιον*] the gladdest tidings that were ever brought to the eare of mortall man. Which Gos- pell in strict termes the Angells preached, *Luc. 2. 10. 11. Be- hold I bring you glad tidings of great ioy, which shall be to all people. That vnto you is borne this day in the City of David, a Saviour which is Christ the Lord.* And afterward Christ and his Apostles fully explained the mysteries thereof vnto the world. According to this necessary distinction, wee an- swere. That if wee take the Gospell in that large acception, tis true which *Bellarmino* hath. That the Gospell containes in it the Doctrine of workes (*viz.*) the Morall law, even the very same precepts, prohibitions, threatnings, and promises which are deliuered in the law. All which as Christ and his Apostles preached: so may all Ministers without blame, yea, they must, if they will avoid blame, presse the same vpon their hearers, seasonably and discreetly, that the law may make way for the better receauing and entertainment of Grace in the Gospell. But hence it followes not, that the Gospell



Gospell properly so taken, is to be confounded as one and the same thing with the Law; because the law is conioyned with it in the preachings and writings of the Ministers of the New Testament. They still are divided in their nature & offices: nor hath the Gospell any affinity with the Law in precepts, threatnings, or promises. Wherefore when *Belarmine* teacheth vs. That *Euangelicall promises bee made with condition of perfect fulfilling the Law*. This is a desperate error, and that in the very foundation. You heard his proofes before recited: see now a little how passing weak they be.

I *Mat. 5. Except your righteousness, &c.* To this wee answer. The plaine meaning of the place is this. Our righteousness must abound more then that of the *Pharisees* (that is,) It must not be outside only as theirs was: but inward righteousness of the heart, in inward sanctity of the thoughts and affections, as well as of the outward action: or else such our hypocrisie will keepe vs from entring into heaven. But doth it hence follow, that because wee must bee more perfect then these *Pharisees*, we must bee as perfect in all things as the law requires: we must exceed them, *Ergo*, equall the holiness of the law in all points? Because wee must be sincere without hypocrisie, *ergo*, we must be perfect in all things without blame? Such consequents as these, the *Jesuite* hath concluded out of his owne head, not out of the Text.

Touching that speech of Christ to the young man. *Mat. 19.* and the Lawyer, *Luk. 10.* That if they did fulfill the law, they should liue. We answer, that Christ in so speaking vnto them did not preach the Gospell: but shewed vnto them the legall way to saluation. For these erring that grand error of the Jew in seeking for righteousness, not by faith

Calu. in st. lib. 3.  
cap. 18. §. 9.

but by the workes of the law, seuering the law, from Christ the end thereof; (as the Apostle shewes *Rom. 9. 31. 32. & 10. 3.* and so supposing to bee saued by doing some good thing. Christ answers them in their humour, as euery one should be answered, that swells with high conceits of his own righteousness and workes, that there was a law to be kept: and if they could fully obserue the righteousness of it, they should be saued, sending them of purpose to the law, that they might be humbled thereby and see their great folly in seeking for life by that, which they were so vnable to keepe. Against which answer the *Iesuite* hath nothing to reply; but stands much in confuting of another answer made by some of our Diuines. That Christ spake these things ironically. This *Bellarmino* seekes to confute; nor doe I labour to confirm it; though it might be iustified for any thing he brings to the contrary.

3.

Vnto those places of Scripture that euery where almost promise life, blessednesse, the fauour of God, vpon condition of *[holinesse in life and conuersation; that we mortifie the lusts of the flesh, walke in the spirit, ouercome the world &c.]* We answer, that, *Obedience is one thing, perfect obedience is another.* We say that the promises of the Gospell be all vpon condition of obedience: but none vpon condition of perfect obedience. Tis an iniury done vnto vs, when they say; we teach that *Evangelicall promises* be absolute & without condition, as if God did promise and giue all vnto vs; & we doe nothing for it on our parts. We defend no such dotage. The promises of the Gospell bee conditionall (*viz.:*) Namely vpon condition of *repentance* and *amendment of life*. That we study to our power to obey God in all things; but this is such a condition as requires of vs *sincerity* and *faiethfulness* of endeavour, not *perfection* of obedience in the

the full performance of euery jot and tittle of the law.

Vnto the last argument, from the tenour of the *New Covenant* (*viz.*) That we must beleue if we will be saued; *ergo*, the *promise* of the Gospell is with condition of fulfilling the law. This is an *Argument* might make the *Cardinalls* cheeke as red as his cap, were there any shame in him. Faith indeed is a worke: and this worke is required as a *condition* of the *promise*: but to doe this worke, *To beleue*, though it be to obey Gods commandement, yet it is not perfectly to fulfill the whole law; but *perfectly* to trust in him, who brings mercy and pardon for transgressions of the law.

## CHAP. II.

*Of Bellarmines erroneous distinction of the word Gospell.*



O much of the first member of the *Iesuites* distinction, wherein his sophisticall fraud appeares, taking the Gospell for the whole doctrine of the *New Testament*, published by Christ and his Apostles; and *ergo*; confounding the law and the Gospell as one: because he findes the law as well as the Gospell deliuered vnto vs, by our Sauour and his Ministers: I proceed to the second branch of it. *The Gospell* (saith he) *is taken for the grace of the Holy Ghost given vs in the New Testament: whereby men are made able to keepe the law.* Tis so taken. But where is it so taken? The *Iesuite* cannot tell you that: [*Vt verum fatear* (saith he) *nomen Evangelij non videtur in Scripturis vsquam accipi, nisi pro doctrina.*] No good reason for it, in as much as tis evident to all men, that there is great difference betweene the doctrine of Mans *saluation* by the mercy of God through the *Merits* of Christ (which is pro-

perly the Gospell) and the graces of the holy Ghost bestowed on man in his *Regeneration*, whereby he is made able in some measure, to doe that which is good. But the fault is not so much in the name in calling the grace of God in vs by the name of Gospell: as in the misinterpretation of the matter it selfe. Wherein two errours are committed by the *Iesuite*.

1 In that he maketh the *grace* of the New Testament, to be such strength giuen to man: that thereby hee may fulfill the Law.

2 In that he saith, The Law was giuen without *grace* to keepe it. In both which assertions there is ambiguity and Errour.

For the first, We grant that grace to doe any thing that is good, is giuen by the Gospell, not by the Law. The Law commands: but it giues no strength to obey, because it presupposeth that he, to whom the command is giuen, hath, or ought to haue already in himselfe strength to obey it. And *Ergo*, we confesse it freely, that we [*receiue the spirit not by the workes of the law: but by the hearing of faith preached*] as it is *Gal. 3. 2*. The donation of the Spirit in any measure whatsoeuer of his *sanctifying graces* is from *Christ as a Saviour*, not as a *Lawgiver*. Thus then we agree. That all grace to doe well is giuen vnto vs by the *Gospell*; but next we differ. They teach that the Gospell giues such grace vnto man, that he may fulfill what the law commands: and so bee iustified by it, we deny it, and say that *Grace* is giuen by the *Gospell*, so obey the law sincerely without hypocrisie: but not to fulfill it perfectly without *infirmities*. In which point the *Iesuite* failes in his proofes which he brings.

1 Out of those places where contrary attributes are ascribed to the law and gospell. Vnto the law. That it is [*the ministry*

*ministry<sup>a</sup> of death and condemnation* ] [*Killing<sup>b</sup> letter* ] a 2. Cor. 3. 7. b 2. Cor. 3. 6. c Rom. 4. 15. d Gal 5. 1. e Gal. 4. 24. f 2. Cor. 3. 6. g 2. Cor. 5. 19. h 2. Cor. 3. 6. 7. 17. Gal. 4. 26.  
 that it [*worketh wrath*] that it is a [*roske<sup>d</sup> of bondage*] a  
 [*Testament<sup>c</sup> bringing forth children unto bondage.*] But  
 vnto the gospell, that it is *The ministry<sup>f</sup> of life*] and [*of Re-*  
*conciliation*] s the *h* [*spirit that quickneth*] the [*Testament*  
*that bringeth forth children to liberty*] which opposition  
*Bellarmino* will haue to bee, because the *law giues precepts*  
*without affording strength to keepe them: but the gospell*  
*giues grace to doe what is commanded.* But the *Iesuite* is here  
 mistaken. These opposite attributes giuen to the law, are  
 ascribed to it in a *twofold respect*, 1 In regard of the punish-  
 ment which the law threatens to offenders (*viz.*) *Death*. In  
 which regard principally the law is said to bee the *ministry*  
*of death, to work wrath*, to be not a *dead*, but a *killing letter*:  
 in as much as being broken it leaues no hope to the *Trans-*  
*gressour*: but a fearefull expectation of *eternall death & con-*  
*demnation* of the law vnder the terrors whereof it holdes  
 them in bondage. But on the *Contrary* the gospell is the mi-  
 nistry of life, of *reconciliation of the quickning spirit* and of  
*liberty*, because it reueales vnto vs *Christ* in whom we are re-  
 stored to life; from the deserued death and condemnation of  
 the law, vnto Gods fauour, being deliuered from the wrath  
 to come, vnto liberty; being freed from *slauish feare of punish-*  
*ment*. This is the chiefe reason of this *opposition of Attri-*  
*butes*. Secondly the next is in regard of obedience. In which  
 respect the *ministry* of the Law is said to be the *Ministry* of  
 the Letter written in *tables of stone*: but that of the Gospell  
 is called the *ministry* of the spirit which writes the law in  
 the *fleshly tables* of the heart. Because the law barely com-  
 mands: but Ministers not power to obey; and so is but as a  
 dead letter without the Vertue of the spirit. But in the Gos-  
 pell grace is giuen from *Christ*, who by the *Holy Ghost* fan-  
 tifieth

stiffeth the heart of his elect, that they may liue to *Righteousnesse* in a sincere thought not euery way exact conformity to the law of God. The like answere wee giue vnto another prooffe of his.

- 2 Out of that place (*Iohn 1. 17. The law came by Moses: but grace and truth by Iesus Christ.*) that is (saith *Belarmine*) *The law came by Moses without grace to fulfill it: but grace to keepe it, by Christ.*

We answere. The true interpretation of these words is this: *Moses* deliuered a twofold law, *Morall & Ceremoniall*. Opposite to these *Christ* hath brought a twofold *priviledge*. Grace for the *morall law*, whereby we vnderstand not onely power giuen to the *regenerate* in part to obserue this Law, which strength could not come by the Law it selfe: but also, much more *Remission of sinnes* committed against the law, and so our iustification and freedome from the guilt of sinne and curse of the *Morall law*. Secondly, truth for the *Ceremoniall law* the substance being brought in & the shadows vanished. Wherefore the *Iesuite* erres greatly in this point; when he makes the grace of the *New Testament* to consist in this. That strength is thereby giuen vs to fulfill the Law. The grace of God in the Gospell is chiefly our *Iustification* and redemption from the curse of the Law: and in the next place strength afforded vs to obey the law in some measure not *perfectly* as our aduersaries would haue it. In the next point he erres as much in saying that the Law of *Moses* was giuen without grace to obey it. A false assertion. For although the law of it selfe giue not grace: yet tis certaine that grace was giuen by Christ euen then when *Moses* published the law. Sufficient for the prooffe hereof are. 1 These excellent properties ascribed vnto the law of God, as in other places of the *Old Testament*: so specially in the booke of the *Psalmes*

res. And amongst the in the 19. & 119. Ps. where the law  
 od is said to (*give light to the eyes, to convert the soule,*  
*ioice the Heart &c.*) which it could not doe of it selfe,  
 not the grace of the *Holy Ghost* beene given in these  
 1. Without which the Law could worke no such saving  
 ts. 2 Experience of those times in the faith *Patience and*  
*ience*, and all sorts of *graces* shining in those auncient  
 ts, who liued before & after the law was given. Which  
 ts they receiued from the *Holy Ghost*, shed vpon their  
 ts by vertue of *Christ* mediation, whereby they recei-  
 trength to liue holily in obedience vnto the law of  
 . The difference betweene these times, and those vnder  
 aw, is not, that wee haue grace and they had none: but  
 in the measure & extent of the same grace bestowed,  
 on vs and them. In those times as the Doctrine of the  
 ell was more obscurely reuealed, so the grace which ac-  
 panies it was more sparingly distributed, being confi-  
 to a Church collected of one nation, and bestowed vpon  
 at Church in a lesser measure, the now; though yet suf-  
 idly in that measure. But in the times of the new Testa-  
 t, the light shines more brightly, and grace is dispensed  
 : liberally, being extended indifferently to all Nations  
 poured vpon the Godly in a larger abundance: accor-  
 as was promised *Ieremiab. 31*. Though also this com-  
 on must be restrained vnto whole Churches, what ge-  
 y is now done; for no doubt in many particulars some  
 vnder the law exceede for abundance of grace, many  
 r the Gospell. Wherefore it is a notable iniury vnto the  
 nty of God, and the honour of those Saints of old, to  
 ade them from partaking of the Gospell; to affirme that  
 were led only by the *Spirit* of Feare, and not of loue;  
 they receiued not the *Spirit* of adoption to cry *Abba*

Thou art our  
 Father <sup>b</sup> See  
*Becanus Tom. 2.*  
*Tract. 4 cap. 5.*  
*Quest. 1. 2. 3.*

Y . . . father

father as well as wee though not plentifully as wee; and so<sup>b</sup> that they were not sonnes though vnder *Tutors* and *governors*, as wee confesse they were but very seruants held in Bondage and excluded from the inheritance of grace, & glory till after *Christs* Death. So that at best their adoption was but *conditionall* with regard of time to come: but, for the present, they were handled as slaues fear'd with *temporall punishments* allured by *temporall rewards*, like a heard of swine fed with base *acornes and huskes*. These bee absurd errors bred out of Scripture misvnderstood. Especially that of *Iohn*: 1. *Grace came by Christ. Ergo, not before Christs Incarnation*: A silly Argument. *Christ* is as old as the *world*, and his grace as ancient as the name of man vpon earth. Grace alwaies came by *Christ*, and was in its measure giuen by him long before he appear'd in the flesh. Hee was euer the head of his Church, and that his body, which he alwaies quickned by the blessed influence of his spirit ministred therevnto. Whereby the *Godly* before as well as since his *incarnation* were made liuing members of that his *mysticall Body*. Wherefore it is apparant, that grace is not to be tied to the times of the *Gospell* and seuered from the Law. Nay, as of old the Law was not alwaies without *grace*: so now many times the *Gospell* it selfe is without *grace* *Christ* him selfe being a *stumbling stone and rocke of offence*, the *Gospell* a *sanour of death* to many of those, vpon whom *Grace* is not bestowed; to beleue and embrace it.

I conclude then. That this difference, which our aduersaries make betweene the Law and *Gospell* is false: and that their error is pernicious in making the *Gospell* to be nothing, but the spirit added to the Law that man may fulfill it to his Iustification. That thus a man may bee saued by *Christ* through the perfect fulfilling of the law. Which is a monstrous



strous and vncouth Doctrine laying an vnſupportable burthen vpon the conscience of man and hazarding his soule to eternall destruction: whiles by this meanes hee frustrates the Grace of God in Christ; and withall frustrates his owne hopes of life expecting to obtaine it by that Law which hee is neuer able to fulfill.

### SECT. 5. CHAP. 1.

*Iustification by fulfilling the law, overthrowes  
Christian liberty, the parts of our  
Christian liberty.*



O much of the third argument: The last followes drawne from the Nature of *Christian liberty*. Which is this.

4. Arg. *That which overthrowes our Christian liberty purchased for vs by the death of Christ: thats no Evangelicall, but an Hareticall Doctrine.* 4. Argument

*But iustification by the workes of the law overthrowes the spirituall liberty of man obtained for him by Christ.*

Ergo. 'Tis an heresie against the Gospell.

For the prooffe of the *minor proposition*, let vs in briefe consider wherein stands that Liberty wherewith Christ hath made vs free, that so we may the better perceiue what part thereof, this doctrine of iustification by workes doth nullifie and depriue vs of. The liberty wee haue in Christ is either in regard of the *Life to come*, or of *this present life*. The first is the *liberty of Glory* consisting in a full deliuerance from the state of vanity & misery, both sinfull & painefull, wherunto we are now subiect. And not wee only, but the whole Creation, which with vs *συμμάχου & συναδελφου* groweth and trauaileth in paine, till with vs it also be deliuered, *καὶ τὸ*

Αυαίαις τῆς ἐσθρᾶς εἰς τὴν ἐλευθερίαν τῆς δόξης τῶν τέκνων τοῦ Θεοῦ;  
*From the bondage of corruption, into the Glorious liberty of the sonnes of God,*) as the *Apostle* declares *Rom. 8. 19. & seq.*  
 This liberty we haue in hope, not in possession. The next we actually inioy in this life, and that is the *liberty of grace*. This we may diuide not vnfitly into three branches: 1 *Freedom from sinne*: 2 *Freedom from the Law*: 3 *Freedom from Men*.

1 Our *Freedom from sinne* stands in 2 things; 1 *In our deliuerance from the Punishment of Sinne*. For whereas euery sinne in its owne nature brings with it guiltines, and a sure obligatiō vnto punishment, binding ouer the transgressor vnto the paines of Gods eternall wrath by a stronger chaine then of Steele or Adamant: *Christ* by his meritorious *satisfaction* hath broken these bonds, and ransomed vs from this fearefull bondage vnto Hell and destruction. *He being made a curse for vs, hath redeemed vs from the curse of the law.* *Gal. 3. 13.* That is, By taking on himselfe the punishment of our sinnes in his owne person suffering, and satisfying the wrath and iustice of God, he hath once for euer set vs free from the dreadfull vengeance of God, which wee deserue should fall vpon vs for our iniquities.

2 In our deliuerance from the power of sinne, which though it abide in vs in the reliques of our corrupted nature: yet by the power of the *Holy Ghost* dwelling in the *Hearts* of the *Regenerate*, it is subdued and kept vnder, that it doth not reigne nor exercise its commanding authority without controule. So that whereas the *Vnregenerate* be the Seruants of Sinne, wholly at the command of *Satan* and wicked affections, the *Regenerate* are freed from this *slavery* being ruled and guided by the *Spirit* of the Lord, which wheresoeuer it is, there is liberty, as the *Apostle* speaks, 2.

*Cor.*

Cor. 3. 17. Liberty from that blindnesse wherein wee are holden by Nature, not knowing what the will of God is. Liberty from that rebellion and infirmity of our nature, whereby wee are, nor willing, nor able to doe the will of God. From which we are freed in part by the Spirit of Christ, inlightning our mindes, and changing our hearts. This Liberty from sinnes dominion and damnation, St Paul ioynes together, Rom. 8. 2. (*The law of the spirit of life, which is in Christ Iesus, hath freed me from the law of sinne and of Death.*) And againe. Rom. 6. 14. *Sinne shall not have dominion over you, for ye are not under the law, but under grace.*

2 Our freedome from the law is either from the } Ceremoniall  
or  
} Morall law.

The Ceremoniall law contained in it diuerse Carnall Ordinances (*δυναμικὰ ἑντολὰς*) to endure vntill the time of reformation. From all which Christ hath freed the Church of the New Testament, as namely.

Heb. 9. 13.

1 From the whole burthen of Legall ceremonies whatsoever vsed in the worship of God. Those resemblances are of no vse now, when the substance it selfe is come in place: nor may such *beggarly and impotent rudiments* be sought after, when greater perfection is to be had Gal. 4. 9.

2. From that restraint in things indifferent, wherevnto the Iewes were tied: but wee are not bound. Such are the obseruations of dayes, of meates & drinkes, of garments, with the like. Wherein the Iewes were restrained: but our consciences are left free, being taught that *euery creature of God is good being sanctified by prayer and thanksgiving.* 1. Tim.

4. 4 5. And that to the <sup>b</sup>pure all things are pure. Only this being obserued, that wee abuse not this our Liberty, but that as wee are informed by faith that all things are lawfull.

1. Tim. 4. 5.

1 Cor. 10. 23.

for vs: so wee should be taught by *charity* to see what are expedient in regard of others. That a due regard be had of others infirmity, that nothing bee done whereby the truly weake *may be scandalized*, as the *Apostle* commands, *Rom. 14. 21.* By which meanes *knowledge* on the one side still preferues vs, that our *consciences* be not insnared with *superstition*, & *charity* on the other side shall keepe our Liberty from degenerating into licentiousnesse, & *unchristian* contempt of our weake brethren.

This liberty from humane constitutions binding the Conscience, is properly not a benefit purchased for vs by Christs death: but it is an intire priuiledge of our creation, whereby our Consciences are exempt from mens command, & onely subiect to Gods iurisdiction. Yet because this Liberty is a part of our spirituall Liberty, it is usually called Christian Liberty.

2 Our freedome from the *Morall law* stands in this, that whereas the law requires of euery man, vpon strictest termes of *Necessity*, full and compleate obedience to all things whatsoeuer contained in it, if he will auoide the *punishment* of Hell fire: *Christ* hath freed all that beleue in him from this heauy and rigorous exaction of the law, taking away from our consciences this obligation vnto a necessary fulfilling thereof, vpon paine that wee shall forfeit *Heauen* if wee doe it not. As we shall see more anon.

3 In the last place our freedome is from men: namely from all power & authority they may claime ouer our *consciences*: they may hold our persons in subiection, but them cannot command ouer our *consciences*. Vee acknowledge no Iurisdiction of man or Angell ouer our Consciences; but only that of God that created vs, and of Christ that hath redeemed vs. Whosoever *ergo* shall impose vpon man any *humane traditions, opinions, or Ordinations* whatsoeuer to tie his *conscience* vnto obedience by vertue of his own *authority*, such a one trenches vpon Gods high *Prerogative*, and vsurpes *tyrannically* ouer the *soules* of men, according, as at this day that *Man* of Sinne doth. But here we must obserue that humane constitutions be either *Ecclesiasticall* or *Politick Ecclesiasticall* concerne either the *matter* and *substance* of

of Gods worship when any thing is inuented by man, and commanded, wherein and whereby to worship God.<sup>2</sup> The *manner* and *external order* of Gods worship in the determination of indifferent circumstances tending to *decencie* and *comelineffe*.

For the former wee renounce and reiect all *humane authority* whatsoeuer, that shall without warrant from the Scriptures prescribe vnto the *Church* any doctrine to bee receiued as a diuine Truth or *custome*, *ceremony* or *practise* whatsoeuer to be obserued as a proper part of Gods most holy worship. According as our *reformed Churches* haue happily recouered their liberty by breaking asunder those cordes, and casting away that yoke of false doctrine of superstitious, *ceremoniall* will-worships, wherewith not Christ, but Anti-Christ had insnared and oppressed the Church. And they haue Gods owne warrant for so doing, *Ifay. 29. 13.* ratified and explained by *Christ, Mat. 15. 9. (In vaine they worship me, teaching for doctrine mens precepts:)* which was a thing contrary to Gods expresse commandement. *Ezech. 20. 18. 19. (Walke yee not in the ordinances of your fathers, neither obserue their manners, nor defile your selues with their Idoles: I am the Lord your God walke in my Statutes, and keepe my iudgements and doe them.)*

For the latter, namely *humane Constitutions* concerning indifferent *circumstances* in Gods worship, tending to orderly decency agreeable to the simplicity and purity of the *Gospel*: herein wee must acknowledge the *authority* of the Church though not ouer our *consciences* to bind them: yet ouer our *Practises* to order and limit them. Accordingly as also we doe in the other branch of *humane obedience*. viz. *Politickall* or *cruill*, comprising all law, touching lawfull things made for the gouernance of *Kingdomes*, or *inferior* states

Rom. 13. 5.

*states by the supreme Magistrate, that hath authority so to doe. Wherevnto wee (must be subiect, not because of wrath only, but also for conscience sake.) For conscience sake, not because the highest Monarch on Earth hath power over the conscience of his meanest subiect, to binde it by vertue of his owne authority: but because God hath established the Magistrates authority and commanded subiects obedience in lawfull things, & therefore wee cannot disobey them without breach of conscience, in disobeying and violating also Gods Commandement. But otherwise for any immediate power the conscience, to restrain the inward liberty thereof, no man without presumption may arrogate it, nor any without flauish basenesse yeeld to another, as the Apostle commands (ye are bought with a price, bee not yee servants of men.)* This is in brieft the Doctrine of *Christian* or *spirituall liberty*, which wee call *Christian*: 1. from the cause of it, *Christ*, by whose purchase wee enioy it, 2 From the subiect of it, *Christians*, in opposition to the *serues*, who had not this liberty in all parts of it as wee haue. Namely in freedome from the *ceremoniall Law*, and restraint in things indifferent. In all other parts they in their measure were freed by *Christ* as well as wee. Again wee call it *spirituall* in opposition to *civil* & *bodily Liberty*: because it stands in the freedome of soule & conscience, not in the freedome of the outward man; the bondage & subiection whereof is no impeachment to this *spirituall* freedome. As *Anabaptisticall Libertines* would perswade the world contrary to the *Apostles* decision, 1. *Cor.* 7. 22. (*He that is called in the Lord being a servant, is the Lords Free-man.*)

1 Cor. 7. 23.

CHAP. II.

CHAP. II.

*Iustification by workes subiects vs to the rigour and curse of the Law.*



E are now in the next place to see which *branch* of our liberty is cut off by the doctrine of *Iustification by workes*. Not to meddle with others whereat it giues a *backblow*, but to take that which it directly strikes at: we say, it destroies our liberty from the morall law, which stands herein, that wee are not obliged vnto the perfect fulfilling of that law, vpon paine of *eternall damnation*, if wee doe it not. This gracious liberty Christ hath enfranchised vs withall, whosoever belieue in him: and they that now teach we are iustified by workes of the law, doe rob our *consciences* of this heavenly freedome, bringing vs againe vnder that miserable bondage vnto the Law, wherein all men are holden, which are in *the state of infidelity and vnregeneration*, from whom the law in extremest rigour exacts perfect obedience if they will be saved.

For the clearing hereof, this in the first place is manifest. That he which will bee iustified by the workes of the Law, is necessarily tied to fulfill the whole Law: seeing 'tis impossible the law should iustifie them that transgresse it. In the next place then we must proue, that for a *mans conscience* to be thus tied to the fulfilling of the law for the obtaining of *Iustification*, is an vnsupportable yoke of *spirituall bondage*, contrary to that liberty, wherewith Christ hath made every beleeuers free. This shall appeare in confirming of this *Proposition*.

*A man regenerate endued with true faith in Christ Iesus, is not bound in conscience vnto the fulfilling of the whole law*

*law for his Iustification.*

This Proposition seemes very strange vnto our aduersaries & to be nothing else but a *ground plot* whereon to build all licentiousnesse and Libertinisme, as if wee did discharge men of all *Allegiance* to God and subiection to his lawes. But their *Calumnies* are not sufficient confutations of *orthodox doctrine*: for the stopping of their mouths we throwe them this distinction, whereon they may gnaw while they breake their teeth, before they bite it in peeces. Mans conscience stands bound vnto the law of God in a twofold obligation. Either

1 Of *Obedience*, that according to the measure of grace receiued, hee endeauour to the vtmost of his power to liue conformably to the Law of God in all things.

2 Of *fulfilling the Law*, that in euery jot and tittle hee obserue all things whatsoeuer it commands vpon paine of *everlasting condemnation* for the least transgression.

We teach that no true beleeuer is freed from the *Obligation* vnto *Obedience*, but so farre as by grace giuen him hee is enabled, he ought to strue to the vtmost, to performe all duties towards God and man commanded in the law, if hee will iustifie his faith to be sound, without *Hypocrisie*. *And ergo, our doctrine is no doctrine of licentiousnesse*. But on the other side wee teach, that euery true beleeuer is freed from that *obligation* vnto the *fulfilling* of the law; for the attaining of life and *iustification* by it. Which *materiall* difference for the clearing of our doctrine not obserued or rather suppressed by <sup>a</sup> *Bellarmino*, causeth the *Iesuite* to labour much in a needlesse dispute, to proue against vs, *That a Christian man is tied to the obseruation of the morall law*. He tells vs *that Christ is a law-giuer as well as a Redeemer of his Church, prescribing orders for all in common, for each one in particular*

<sup>a</sup> Lib. 4. de Iustificatione. cap. 5.



particular. That he is a Iudge that sentenceth according to law. That he is a king that ruleth ouer subiects vnto a law. That Christ by his coming did not destroy, but fulfill the law, expounded it and enioyned it to be obserued by vs. That his Apostles urge it in euery Epistle. That a Christian man sinning offends against the law, and eeryo is bound to keepe the law. In all which the Iesuite encounters his owne phantasie and not our doctrine which is not wounded by such misguided weapons. For we grant without struiuing, that euery Christian is tied to obserue the morall law, and we averre that it is a most vnchristian and Iesuiticall slander to affirme, as he doth, that we teach (*Christianum<sup>b</sup> nulli legi obnoxium et subiectum esse in conscientia coram Deo.*) <sup>b ibidem.</sup> Nay we teach that he is bound to obey to the utmost of his power: and from this obligation no authority of man or Angell, Pope or Diuell, can discharge him. So much wee grant the arguments alleaged by the Cardinall doe enforce, and nothing else. They proue Obedience necessary to a beleeuing Christian: but they can neuer proue perfect fulfilling of the Law, to be necessarily required of him. From this heavy burthen Christ hath eased the shoulders of all such as are in him by a liuely faith, of whom God doth no longer exact perfect Obedience to his law in those strict and rigorous termes, that they shall be accursed if they fulfill it not. This we proue by these Scriptures.

1 Gal. 5. 1. 2. 3. (Stand fast (saith the Apostle) in the liberty wherein Christ hath made vs free, and be not entangled againe with the yoke of bondage.) But what is this yoke of bondage? Is it only the obseruation of the ceremoniall law? No. That was indeed part of the yoke which the Apostles sought to lay on the consciences of the Galatians. But 'twas the least and the lightest part, the weightiest burthen was

the fulfilling of the *morall law*, wherevnto by the doctrine of the false Apostles, the *Galatians* stood obliged. This is plaine by the Text in the words following. [*Behold, I Paul say unto you that if you be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. For I testifie againe to euery man, which is circumcised, that he is bound to keepe the whole law.*] The Apostles dispute is here eident. The *Galatians* may not be circumcised, nor obserue the *Ceremoniall law*. Why? Because if they did Christ should not profit them at all. But what reason is there for this, that *circumcision* and the *ceremonies* should frustrate the benefit of Christs death? The Apostle allegeth a good reason, because the obseruation of the ceremoniall law, tied them also to the fulfilling of the whole morall law. The Argument is thus framed.

*They who are bound to keepe the whole law haue no profit at all by Christ.*

*But they who are circumcised, are bound to keep the whole law. ergo,*

*They that be circumcised haue not profit at all in Christ.*

The *minor* in this Argument is the expresse words of the Text, and the prooffe of it is eident in reason, because the retaining of *Legall ceremonies* did in effect abolish Christs comming in the flesh, who by his comming in the flesh had abolished them. And *ergo*, they who in reuiuing them, denied Christs death, had no meanes at all to be saued: but onely by the fulfilling of the *morall law*. Wherevnto they were necessarily bound, if they meant not to perish. Which reason yet is of no force before Christ his comming, and *ergo* then *circumcision* and other *legall ceremonies*, did not lay vpon the *Iewes* such a strict obligation to fulfill the whole law. The *Maior Proposition* is the very reason of the Apostles *Enthymeme*; thus. [*men circumcised are bound to keepe*

keepe the whole law: Ergo, Christ shall not profit them ) The reason of the consequence is this Proposition, [ Whosoever are bound to keepe the whole law, Christ profiteth them nothing at all. ] This Argument, and the reason thereof, will hardly passe with approbation in the *Iesuites Schooles*, [ Men are bound to the whole law, ergo, Christ shall not profit them. ] Nay, will they reply: that's a *nonsequitur*. For by that doctrine, Christs death hath cancelled that streight obligation of fulfilling the Law: but every one that beleevues the promise of saluation in Christ, is yet notwithstanding obliged to fulfill the whole *morall law*. For this is ( say they ) the very condition wherevpon hee must haue benefit by the promise, euen ( *Perfecta Mandatorum observatio* ) and therefore he is so farre from being freed by Christ from this obligation vnto the Law, that for a certaine, except hee fulfill it, he shall neuer be saued; as <sup>b</sup> Bellarmine peremptorily and bloodily determines. These men when they list are wondrous *mercifull* towards *sinners*, and can teach them *trickes* by very easie meanes, to merit heauen and Remission of Sinnes. But their cruelty betraies their kindnesse in other matters; in as much as when all comes to the vpshot, a Sinner is driven to this. *If he will be saued by Christ, hee must as he is bound, perfectly keepe the whole law: else there's no hope for him.* This is cold comfort for the poore beleeuers: but 'tis happy we haue not *Iesuits*, *Pharaohs* take masters, set ouer vs, to exact the whole tale of Bricke: but a *Iesus*, who hath freed our soules from this bitter thraldome and deliuered vs from the power of so rigorous and strickt commands of the Law. We beleeuue an Apostle of Christ against all the *Sycophants* of *Rome*, and tell them that they giue the *holy Ghost* the lye, when they teach that in beleeuers the obligation to keepe the whole law stands still in full force and vertue not

a Lib. 4. cap. 2.  
b Lib. 4. cap. 7.  
(Si promissio vite eterne, est conditionata, ut cap. 1. probamus: certe necessarium est implere conditionem, si quis saluus fieri velit. Et si iustus non est liber ab obligatione Legis diuinae: certe nisi eam impleret non saluabitur.)

in Christ Iesus, are freed from the necessity of perfectly fulfilling it, for the obtaining of saluation. But the law hath a coactive power ouer the vniust and vnbeleeuers, because they are obliged vnto the perfect fulfilling thereof, or else to bee certainly accursed. And *ergo* wee say the law commands ouer the iust as ouer sonnes requiring of them a faithfull and willing endeaour: but it commands ouer the vniust, as ouer *Servants*, of whom it exacts the vttermost farthing, and vpon the legall default threatens eternall malediction. The difference then betwixt them and vs, is this. They make the coercion of the law to consist in the manner or quality of mans obedience to it. The law compels when men obey vnwillingly. Wee make the coercion of the law to consist in the quality of the command, and condition wherevpon obedience is required. The law then compels, when it exacts full obedience vpon penalty precisely threatned to the disobedient. Wherein the truth is manifestly on our side. For 'tis plaine, that compulsion in a Law must be taken in opposition to direction, not persuasion, for lawes perswade not, but command. For if we speak properly a law cannot bee said to compell those, to whom 'tis giuen, as if by any reall and physicall operation it did enforce them to obedience. It proposeth what is to bee done, it setteth before a man, the punishment for disobedience: but it workes not on the will of man, to force it one way, or other. Wherefore if we know what direction in a law is; we shall soone knowe what compulsion is. Direction (as all agree) is the bare prescription, of what is to bee done, or left vndone. Compulsion, that is, the exaction of obedience vpon penalty to be inflicted. What other coactive force there is in a law, no man can imagine. Well then to apply this. The iust are *sub directione Legis*: but not *sub coactione*. This must

So a King is vnder the Direction: not the compulsion of the law: because not tyed to the Penalty.

must of necessity be vnderstood thus; the iust are not vnder the coactiue power of Gods law, because it doth not exact of them full obedience vpon penalty of eternall death, to be otherwise inflicted on them. As it doth exact of the vniust. For otherwise there will be no difference betweene the iust and the vniust in regard of this coactiue power of the law, if both the one and the other be obliged to yeeld, alike perfect obedience vpon the like penalty. In this case the Law will be as coactiue to one, as the other, exacting equall obedience, vpon equall termes, both of the iust and vniust. (*viz*) obey fully in all things: or you shall be cursed. The *sonne* and *Servant* shall be all one, and the Law shall still command ouer the children, with as much terror, as ouer the Bondslau. There is no difference in the world; in our aduersaries doctrine, both sorts are bound to obey perfectly, or else certainly they shall not be saued. So that the law of it selfe shall be as rigorous towards one as the other. But wee know the scriptures offer vnto vs more mercy: and that *Christ* hath discharged vs from this rigour of the Law, vnder which euery one, that is out of him in the state of vnbeleefe is holden in bondage. As to the difference they make (*the iust obey willingly, the vniust unwillingly, and ergo the Law compels these and not those*) this is nothing to the purpose. For it alters not the nature of the Law, that it is obeyed with diuerse affections. The Law is the same, for its command and authority; howsoeuer it be obeyed willingly or vniwillingly that matters not. The law ceaseth not to be coactiue, because 'tis willingly obeyed: euen as a slau ceaseth not to be vnder the coaction and compelling power of his Master, though he loue his master; and out of a willing minde be content to abide in thraldome. And as *Adam*, though he obeyed the law willingly; yet was vnder the co-

active power of it; because he was tyed to obey it, or else he should certainly die the death for his transgression of it. Wherefore I conclude, that the iust are not freed from the Lawes direction, nor from the lawes compulsion, as it compels or enioynes them absolute obedience in all things, and for default thereof threatens the vnavoidable malediction of Gods eternall wrath.

cum. v. 11.

<sup>b</sup> Rom. 7. 1. 2.  
8c.

3 Lastly for prooffe of this point wee haue those places formerly alleadged. Rom 6. 14. [*Wee are not under the law, but under grace.*] Gal. 5. 18. [*If wee be led by the spirit, wee are not under the law*] 2. Cor. 3. 17. [*Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.*] Gal. 3. 13. [*Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the law, being made a curse for vs.*] All which, with <sup>b</sup> other the like, doe establish this orthodox doctrine; That beleeuers haue obtained freedome by Christ, from the rigour of the Morall law, and are not any longer bound in conscience to the perfect fulfilling thereof upon this assured perill, that if they keepe it not they shall not be saved. Wee might stand longer vpon each testimony: but let that which wee haue said, suffice for the vindicating of our conscience from that torture and bondage wherewith these Popish Doctors would ensnare vs. The knowledge of which our liberty, is not to giue vs occasion of security or licentiousnesse, as these men calumniate: but to restore peace and spirituall rest vnto our soules; knowing that wee are now deliuered from the necessity of obeying, or of perishing, which before we were in Christ, lay more heauy vpon our soules then a mountaine of lead. That so being freed from this thralldome, we might serue him who hath freed vs; thankfully, and chearefully, obeying him in all duty, by whom wee haue obtained this glorious priuledge; that whereas perfect obedience was  
some.

sometimes strictly exacted of vs: now our *sincere*, though *imperfect* indeauours, shall bee mercifully accepted at our hands.

## SECT. 6 CHAP. I.

*The reconciliation of that seeming opposition, between  
S. Paul, & S. James in this point  
of Iustification.*

**T**Hus much of this Argument and of the first Branch of mans *Righteousnesse*, whereby if it were possible he should be iustified. viz. *His Obedience to the law of God*. By which meanns wee haue shewed no flesh shall be iustified in Gods sight. Wee are to proceed vnto the next branch hereof. viz. *Mans satisfaction for his transgression of the law*. Wherein we haue also to proue, that a sinner cannot be acquitted before Gods iudgement seat, by pleading any *satisfaction*; that himselfe can make for his offences.

2 Conclusion

But in our passing vnto that point wee are to giue you warning of that stumbling stone which *S. James*, (as it may seeme) hath layed in our way: least any should dash his faith vpon it; and fall, as our aduersaries haue done into that error of iustification by workes. That blessed *Apostle*, in the second chapter of his Epistle, seemes not only to giue occasion: but directly to teach this doctrine of *Iustification* by workes. For in the 21. ver. &c. He saith expressly, that *Abraham* was iustified by workes when hee offered his sonne *Isaacke* vpon the altar; & also that *Rahab* was in like manner iustified by workes, when she entertained the spies. Whence also he sets downe v. 22. a generall *Conclusion*. *That a man is iustified by workes and not by faith alone*. Now in shew, no-





gainst the truth. But this medicine is worse then the disease, and is rather violence, then skill, thus to cut the knot where it cannot be readily untied. A safer and milder course may be holden; and some meanes found out for the according of this grand difference without robbing the *Church* of so much pretious treasure, of diuine knowledge, as is stored vp in this Epistle. Wherefore both they of the *Romish* and wee of the reformed *Churches*, admitting this Epistle for *canonical* doe each of vs search after a fit reconciliation between the *Apostles*. But they and wee betweene our selues are irreconcilable in our seuerall reconciliations of them. They reconcile them thus. By distinguishing. 1. of *Iustification*. 2. of *Workes*. *Iustification* (say they) is of two sorts.

- 1 *The first when a man of vniust is made iust and holly, by the Infusion of grace, or the Habit of charity.*
- 2 *The 2. When a man of iust is made more iust by the augmentation of the Habit of grace first giuen vnto him.*

Againe they diuide workes into two sorts.

- 1 *Some goe before faith, being performed by the meere strength of nature, & free will without the helpe of grace and such workes as these are not meritorious.*
- 2 *Some follow faith, being performed by the aide and assistance of grace giuen vnto man: & such workes as these be meritorious.*

These distinctions prepared, the worke is now ready for the sodering, which they finish artificially glewing together the *propositions* of the two *Apostles* in this sort. S. Paul saith that *Abraham, and all men are iustified by faith without workes*. This (say they) is to be vnderstood of the first *iustification*, and of workes done before faith, without grace, by the

strength of nature. So that the meaning of *Pauls* proposition (*Abraham & all men, are iustified by faith without workes*) is this. Neither *Abraham*, nor any other can deserue the Grace of Sanctification, whereby of *unjust* and *unholy* they be made *iust* and *holy*, by any workes done by them, when they are naturally men, destitute of grace, but only by faith in *Christ Iesus*, or thus. No man merits grace to make him a good man of a bad, by anything he doth before hee beleene in *Christ*; but by beleeming hee obtaineth this. On the other side *S. James* saith that (*Abraham and all others are iustified by workes, not by faith only.*) this (say the *Romanists*) is meant of the second iustification, and of such workes as are done after faith, by the aide of grace: So the meaning of the Proposition shall be this. *Abraham and other men being once made good and iust, deserue to be made better, and more iust by such good workes as they performe through the helpe of Grace giuen unto them; and not by faith only. Being once sanctified, they deserue the encrease of sanctification through that merit of their faith, and good workes out of Faith and Charity.*

Is not this difference between these *Apostles* finely accorded thinke you? They will now walke together being in this sort made friends through the mediation of the *Schoolemen*, but it is otherwise. They are so farre from reconciling them, that they haue abused them both, and set them farther asunder making them speake what they neuer meant. Neither in *S. Paul*, nor *S. James* is there any ground at all, whereon to raise such an interpretation of their words. And therefore wee respect this reconcilement, as the *shifting quicke* of a *Schoolemans* braine, that hath no footing at all in the text. Which wee doe vpon these reasons.

- I That distinction of *Iustification* (that is of sanctification)

tion) into the first giuing of it, and the after increase of it, (howsoeuer tollerable in other matters) is vterly to no purpose, as it is applied vnto the doctrine of these *Apostles*. VWho when they speake of *Iustification* of a sinner in Gods sight doe vnderstand thereby the *Remission* of *Sins* through the imputation of Christ's Righteousnesse and not the infusion, or increase of *inherent sanctity* in the soule of man. This confusion of *Iustification* with *sanctification* is a prime error of our aduersaries in this article, as hath beene shewed, in clearing the acceptations of the word *Iustification*: and shall be shewed more at large in handling the forme of our *Iustification*.

2. The distinction of Iustification taken in their owne sense is falsely applied to *S. Iames* as if hee spake of the 2. *Iustification*, and to *S. Paul* as if he spake of the first. For first *a Bellarmine* himselve being iudge *S. Iames* in the example of *Rahab* speakes of the first iustification, because (as hee saith) shee was then, at the first made a beleeuer of an infidell, a righteous woman of an harlot. And againe *Paul* hee speakes of the 2 *Iustification* in the example of *Abraham*, which is alleaged by both the *Apostles*. Her's then a confusion instead of a distinction. *Paul* speakes of the first, *Iames* speakes of the 2 and yet both doe speake of both *Iustifications*. Again when they say *Iames* speakes of the second *Iustification*, whereby of a iust a man becomes more iust, tis a groundles imagination forasmuch as it was to no purpose for the *Apostle Iames* to treat of the second *Iustification*, whereby men grow better: when those *Hypocrites*, with whom hee had to doe, had erred from their first iustification, whereby they were not, as yet, made good, as hee learned *b Iackson* obserues. Nay there is not in all *S. Iames* his dispute, any fillable, that may giue any iust suspicion that by

*a Lib. 4. de Iust. cap. 18. Lorum in Iac. 2.*

*b Iackson of Iust. Faith. S. 2. cap. 6.*

in si-

¶ *Loco supra citato.*

*iustification*, he meanes the increase of inherent iustice. <sup>b</sup>Bel-  
larmino catcheth at the clause v. 22. (*By workes faith was  
made perfect*) which is, in the *Iesuits* construction, *Abrahams  
inherent iustice, begun by faith, receiued increase and perfe-  
ction by his workes*) But this is only the *Iesuites phrensie*. *A-  
braham* his faith and his Righteousnesse, whereof his faith is  
but a part, was not made but declared to be perfect, by so  
perfect a work which it brought forth, as, euen *Lorinus*, ano-  
ther of that *sect* expounds it *orthodoxly*.

3 Thirdly, that distinction of workes done before faith,  
without grace, & after faith by grace, is to as little purpose,  
as the former; in this matter of our *iustification*. Heretofore  
wee haue touched vpon that distinction and shewed the va-  
nity thereof, in limiting *Saint Paul* to workes done without  
grace when simply he concludes all workes from our *iusti-  
fication*. And *S. James* though hee require workes, of grace  
to bee ioyned with that faith which must iustifie vs: yet hee  
giues them not that place & office in our Iustification, from  
which *Paul* doth exclude them, and wherein our aduersa-  
ries would establish them, as it shall appeare anon.

Leauing then this *sophisticall reconcilement* coined by  
our aduersaries I come to those *reconciliations* which are  
made by our diuines, wherein we shall haue better *satisfacti-  
on* vpon better grounds. Two waies there are whereby this  
seeming difference is by our *men reconciled*.

I The 1. by distinguishing the word (*iustification*)

which may be taken either } <sup>1</sup> For the absolution of a Sinner  
in Gods iudgement.  
} <sup>2</sup> For the declaration of a mans  
Righteousnesse before men.

This distinction is certaine and hath its ground in Scrip-  
ture which useth the word *iustifie* in both acceptions, for  
the

the quitting of vs in Gods sight, and for the manifestation of our innocency before man against accusation or suspicion of faultinesse. They apply this distinction for the reconciling of the two *Apostles* Thus, *St. Paul* speakes of *Iustification*, (*in foro Dei*) *S. James* speakes of Iustification (*in foro hominis*) *A man is iustified by faith without workes* saith *S. Paul*: that is in God's sight, a man obtaines remission of *Sinnes* and is reputed just only for his *Faith in Christ*, not for his workes sake. *A man is iustified by workes; and not by Faith only* saith *S. James* that is, in mans sight wee are declared to be iust by our good workes, not by our faith only: which with other inward and invisable graces, are made visible vnto man only in the good workes, which they see vs performe. That this application is not vnfit for to reconcile this difference, may be shewed by the parts.

1 For *S. Paul* 'tis agreed on all sides that hee speakes of mans iustification in Gods sight. *Rom. 3.v.20.*

2 For *S. James* we are to shew that with iust probability he may be vnderstood of the declaration of our *Iustification* and righteousness before men. For prooffe whereof the Text affords vs these reasons.

1 Verse. 18. *Shew mee thy faith without thy workes & I will shew thee my faith by my workes.* Where the true *Christian* speaking to the *Hypocriticall* boaster of his faith, requires of him a declaration of his faith and *Iustification* thereby, by a reall prooffe, not a verball profession, promising for his part to manifest and approue the truth of his owne *Faith* by his good workes. Whence it appeares, that before man, none can iustifie the soundnesse of his faith: but by his workes thence proceeding. 2.V.21. *Abraham* is saied to be iustified when he offered vp his sonne *Isaack* vpon the *Altar*. Now 'tis manifest that *Abraham* was iustified in

Gods sight long before; euen. 25 yeares *Gen. 15. 6.* Therefore by that admirable worke of his in offering his sonne he was declared before all the world to be a iust man & a true Beleeuer. And for this purpose did God tempt *Abraham* in that trial of his faith: that thereby all beleeuers, might behold a rare patterne of a liuely and iustifying Faith, and that *Abraham* was not without good cause called the father of the *faithfull*.

3. V. 22. It is said that *Abrahams faith* wrought with his worke and by workes was his *faith* made perfect. Which in the iudgement of *popish*<sup>a</sup> *Expositors* themselues, is to be vnderstood of the manifestation of *Abrahams faith* by his workes. His faith directed his workes: his workes manifested the power and perfection of his faith.

<sup>a</sup> *Lerin in La-  
gob.*

<sup>b</sup> *Lib. 4. cap  
18.*

It is not then without good probability of *Reason*, that *Caluin* and other *expositors* on our side, haue giuen this solution vnto this doubt. <sup>b</sup> *Bellarmino* labours against it and would faine proue that iustification cannot be taken here *pro declaratioue iustitie*. But his argument cannot much trouble any intelligent reader; and therefore I spare to trouble you with his *sophistry*.

This now is the first way of reconciling the places. Howbeit the truth is, that although this may bee defended against any thing that our aduersaries obiekt to the contrary: yet many and those very learned diuines choose rather to tread in another path and more neerely to presse the *Apostles* steps; whom also in this point I willingly follow.

2 The second way then of reconciling these places, is by distinguishing of the word (*Faith*) which is taken in a double sense.

*Gal. 5. 6.*

1. First for that faith, which is true and liuing (*Plex d  
ayntus inquiring, Faith which worketh through loue*) and

and is fruitfull in all manner of Obedience.

2. Secondly for that faith which is false and dead, being only a bare acknowledgement of the truth, of all articles of *Religion* accompanied with an outward formality of *Profession*: but yet destitute of *sincere obedience*.

This distinction of this word (*Faith*) is certaine by the *Scriptures*, as hath heretofore bin shewed in handling of that Grace. Our men now apply it thus *S. Paul* when he affirms that wee are iustified by faith only, speakes of that faith which is true and liuing working by *Charity*. *S. James* when he denies a man is iustified by faith only, he disputes against that faith which is false and dead, without power to bring forth any good workes. So that the *Apostles* speake no *contradictions*, where *Paul* teacheth wee are iustified by a true *Faith*, and *S. James* affirms wee are not iustified by a false *faith*. Again *S. Paul* faith we are not iustified by workes. *S. James* faith we are iustified by Workes. Neither is here any *contradiction* at all. For *S. James* vnderstands by *workes*, a (*working faith*) in opposition to the idle and dead faith before-spoken of (*by a Metonymie of the effect*.) Whence it is plaine that these two *Propositions* (*Wee are not iustified by workes*) which is *Pauls*, and (*We are iustified by a working Faith*) which is *James*, doe sweetly consort together. *Paul* seuers Workes from our *iustification*, but not from our *Faith*. *James* ioyned workes to our faith, but not to our *iustification*. To make this a little plainer by a *similitude* or twaine: there is great difference betweene these two sayings, (*A man liues by a reasonable soule*) and (*A man liues by Reason*.) The former is true, & shewes vs what *qualities* and power are *essentiall* vnto that *soule*, whereby a man liues. But the latter is false, because wee liue not by the quality, or power of *Reason*, though we liue by that *soule* which

hath that quality necessarily belonging to it, without which it is no humane soule. So also in these *Propositions*, (*Planta vivit per animam auctricem*) and *Planta vivit per augmentationem*) each *Puny* can tell that the former is true, & the other false. For although in the *Vegetive soule* whereby *Plants* live, there be necessarily required to the (*Being*) of it those 3 faculties of *Nourishment*, *Growth*, and *Procreation*: yet it is not the faculty of growing that gives life vnto *Plants*, for they live when they grow not. In like manner. These two *Propositions* (*we are iustified by a working Faith*) and (*Wee are iustified by workes*) differ much. The first is true, and shewes vnto vs what *qualities* are necessarily required vnto the (*Being*) of that *Faith*, whereby the iust shall live. Namely, that beside the power of beleeuing in the promise, there be also an *Habituall pronenesse* and *Resolution* vnto the doing of all good *workes*, ioyned with it. But the later proposition is false. For although true faith bee equally as apt to worke in bringing forth *Vniuersall Obedience to Gods will*; as it is apt to beleue and trust perfectly vnto God's promises; yet neuerthelesse wee are not iustified by it as it brings forth good workes; but as it embraceth the promises of the *Gospell*. Now then *Iames* affirms that which is true, that (*we are iustified by a working faith*) and *S. Paul* denies that which is false: viz. (*that wee are iustified by workes*).

CHAP.



CHAP. II.

*The confirmation of the Orthodox reconciliation of S.  
Paul and S. James, by a Logickall Analysis  
of S. James his disputation in  
his second Chapter.*



His *Reconciliation* is the fairest, and hath the most certaine grounds in the *text*. It will, I doubt not, appeare so vnto you, when it shall be cleered from these cavills that can be made against it. There are but only two things in it that may occasion our aduersaries to quarrell. The first is touching the word (*Faith*) wee say that *S. James* speakes of a false and counterfeit faith. They say hee speakes of that which is true, though *Dead* without workes. This is one point.<sup>a</sup>

The second is touching the *interpretation* of the word (*Workes*) vsed by *S. James* when he saieth, (*We are iustified by workes*) This wee interpret by a *Metonymy* of the *Effect* for the *Cause*, wee are iustified by a working faith, by that Faith which is apt to declare and shew it selfe in all good Workes. This interpretation may happily proue distastfull to their nicer *Palates*, who are very ready when it fits their humour, to grate fore vpon the bare words and letter of a text. These *cavills* remoued, this *reconciliation* will appeare to be sure and good. For the accomplishment of this I suppose nothing will be more commodious, thē to present vnto you a briefe resolution of the whole dispute of *S. James* touching *Faith*, that by a plaine and true exposition thereof we may more easily discover the *cavills* & *sophisticall forgeries* wherewith our aduersaries haue pestered this place of

<sup>a</sup> Bell. lib. 1. de  
Iust. ep. 15.

Scripture. The disputation of *S. James* begins at the 14. v. of the second *Chapter* to the end thereof.

The scope and summe whereof is. A sharpe *reprehension* of *hypocriticall faith* of *vaine men* as they are called (v. 20) Which in the *Apostles* time vnder pretence of *Religion* thought they might liue as they list. Two extreames there were, whercunto these Iewes, to whom the *Apostle* writes, were mis-led by false teachers and their owne *corruptions*. The 1. That notwithstanding faith in *Christ*, they were bound to fulfill the whole law of *Moses*; Against which *Paul* disputes in his Epistle to the *Gal.* who also were infected with that Leauen. The other was, that *Faith* in *Christ* was sufficient without any regard of obedience, to the law: so they beleueed the *Gospel*, acknowledging the *Articles* of *Religion* for true, & made an outward profession all should be well, albeit in the meane time sanctity and sincere Obedience were quite neglected. The former error brought them in bondage: this made them licentious. A pleasing *heresy* if any other, whereof there were and will bee alwaies store of *sectaries* who content themselues to haue a forme of *Godlinesse*, but deny the power thereof. Against such *hypocrites* and vaine Boasters of false *Faith* and false *Religion*, *S. James* disputes in this place, shewing plainly that such men leaned on a staffe of *Reed*, deceiuing their owne selues with a counterfeit and shadow of true *Christian Faith* instead of the *substance*. The reproofe with the maine Reason is expresse by way of *interrogation* in the (14. v.) *what doth it profit my brethren, though a man say he haue faith* (as many then did, & alwaies will say, boasting falsely of that which they haue not in truth,) *And haue not workes*; that is, Obedience to Gods Will, whereby to approue that *Faith* he boasts of? Can that *Faith* saue him? Is that faith without

without Workes a sauing Faith that will bring a Man to *Heaven*? These sharpe Interrogations must be resolued into their *strong Negations*. And so wee haue these two *Propositions*. 1. Containing the maine summe of the *Apostle's* dispute: The other a generall *Reason of it*. The 1 is this. *Faith without Obedience is vnprofitable*. The second prouing the first, is this. *Faith without Obedience will not saue a Man*. The whole *Argument* is.

*That Faith which will not saue a man is vnprofitable, of no vse.*

*But the Faith which is without obedience will not saue: Ergo*

*Faith without obedience is vnprofitable.*

The *Maior* of this *Argument* will easilie be graunted. *That it is an vnprofitable faith which will not bring a man to life and Happines*. But how doth *S. James* proue the *Minor*. *That a faith without workes will not doe that?* though it scarce need any prooffe: yet because *hipocrisie* is euer armed with *sophistrie*, for a plainer *Conviction*, the *Apostle* proues it by this manner of *Argumentation*.

*That faith which saues a man is a true faith.*

*But a Faith without workes is not a true faith. Ergo*

*A Faith without workes will not saue man.*

The *Maior* is euident to all that haue *Reason*. The *Minor* *S. James* proues by diuerse *Arguments*.

1. The first is contained v. 15. 16. 17. and it is drawne *à pari*, from comparifon with another like vertue. Namely *Charity* towards the poore. The *Argument* is thus. *If Charity towards the poore professed in words, but without workes be counterfeite, then faith in God professed in like manner without Obedience is also counterfeite not true. But Charity towards the poore in words professed without deeds is a counterfeite*

*terfeit charity. Ergo; Faith in God without obedience is a counterfeit and false faith.*

The Reason of the *maior proposition* is euident, from the *similitude*: that is betweene all vertues and graces. There is no vertue, but men may *counterfeit* and falsely arrogate it to themselves, as they may boast of a false faith, so also (as *Salomon* and experience speakes) of a false *Liberality*, false *Valour*, false *Prudence*, &c. Now there is but one way to discouer this counterfeiting in any kind, and that is to goe from wordes to workes, from presumptions and boastings to a<sup>c</sup>tions. This way all count most certaine, nor will any man beleue words against workes, or be perswaded by faire speaches, that the *habites* of vertues and graces bee truly seated in his mind, whose tongue tells vs they be so: but his doings confute his sayings. Wherefore the *Apostle* in his comparison proceeds on an vndeniable ground. Now for the *minor* (*that the charity which is rich in good words, and poore in almesdeeds, is not true but counterfeit pity*) the *Apostle* shewes by an ordinary instance (*If a brother or sister be naked or destitute of daily food*) that is. If a beleeuing *Christian* want food and raiment or other necessities (*and one of you say vnto them, depart in peace, and be yee warmed & filled*) If he giue him kinde words, *Alas poore soule I pity thee and wish thee well, I would I had to giue thee; goe in Gods name where thou mayest be releued*, & so let him passe with a few pittifull complements, *notwithstanding yee giue them not those things which are needfull for the body: what doth it profit*. Is the poore mans backe euer the warmer? Or his belly the fuller, with a few windy complements? Can such a man perswade any that hee hath in him indeed the *bowells* of mercy and compassion towards the needy, when they find such cold entertainment at his gates. 'Tis manifest that

that this is but a meere mockery, and that such pittifull words come not from a heart that's truly mercifull. The *Apostle* now applies this touching *Charity*, vnto *Faith*. v. 17. *Euen so faith if it haue not workes is dead being alone.* As that *Charity*, so also that *Faith* which men professe without obedience is false and fained, and therefore vnprofitable to saue a man. *It is dead.* How must this be vnderstood? *Faith* is a quality of the soule, & qualities are then said to be dead, when they are extinguished. As if we should say such a mans *Charity* is dead; it is because he hath lost it; that which was in him is abolished. But this is not the meaning. For then when *S. James* saith *that faith is dead being alone.* his meaning should be that *Faith* seuered from *Workes*, is no faith at all: but quite extinguished. Now this is not so: For theres a *Faith* seuered from *Workes* in *Hypocrites*, *Heretiques*, *Reprobates* and *Diuels*. Which *Faith* is a generall assent to all diuine truthe: and this *Faith* in them hath a true being, but no sauing vse. Wherefore it is called a dead faith in regard of the effect: because 'tis nothing auailable to bring them, in whom it is, to life and Saluation, as a true and liuing faith is. Here our aduersaries haue much strange contemplation, telling vs that *Faith* without works though it be a dead faith, yet 'tis a true faith. Euen as an instrument is a true instrument, though it be not vsed. So that in their *Philosophy* 'tis one and the same true *Faith* which is dead without, and liuing with workes. Euen as 'tis one and the same Body which liues with the soule & is dead without it: or as water is the same whether it stand still in a *Ceferne* or runne in a *Riuer*. Whence they proceed to discourse that *Charity* is the forme of faith: & conclude that it is not the inward and *Essentiall* forme of it, as the soule is the forme of a man (for that workes are not essenti-

all to Faith) nor the *accidentall forme* as whitenesse is of Paper; because faith according to their *Schooles*, is in the vnderstanding, and *Charity* in the will: But it is the externall *Forme* of it, because it giues to Faith a *merit* and *worthinesse* for the deseruing of Heauen. These fond *speculations* of the *forme* and *merit* of Faith I passe by now, hauing touched vpon them heretofore. To that which they say, That a liuing faith, and a dead Faith is one & the same true faith: 'tis vtterly false, they differ as much as light and darknesse. 1. In their subiect, a dead faith is in the *Reprobate Man* & *Diuills*. A *liuing faith* only in the *Elect*: 2. In their *Object*. A dead Faith assents to diuine *Revelations* as barely true or good onely in the *generall*: a liuing faith assents to them, as truer and better in themselves; then any thing that can be set against them. 3. in their nature. A dead faith is no sanctifying Grace: but a common gift of creation as in the diuell; of ordiary illumination as in *Reprobate men*. A liuing faith is a sanctifying grace, a part of inherent holinesse wrought in the heart by the speciall power of the *Holy Ghost*. All which haue bin heretofore cleared in handling the *Nature* of Faith. Wherefore vnto those *arguments* or *Sophismes* rather, which <sup>a</sup> Bellarmine brings to proue that Iames speakes of a true *diuine, infused, Catholique, Christian* Faith, though it be dead faith; I answer briefly. That we grant a dead faith to be a true faith: but it is in its kind. Because it hath a true being in men and diuels, in whom it is, and 'tis directed toward true objects: But it is not that true Faith which is *Catholique Christian* and *sauiug*. This is of another kinde, and in comparison of this, that other is but a meere shadow and *conterfeit* resemblance of true Faith. Wherefore when those *Hypocrites* accounted themselves to haue that faith which is truly *Christian* and *sauiug*, S. Iames

<sup>a</sup> Lib. 1. de Iust.  
cap. 15.

*James* shewes them that this their faith which was alone naked of obedience, was nothing so: but a *Faith* of another kind, a dead *faith*, hauing onely a false shew of a true and liuing *faith*. This of the first Argument.

2 The 2<sup>d</sup> Argument is contained. v. 18. being drawne from an impossibility, in prouing the truth of it. The argument stands thus.

*That faith, which is truly Christian may be shewen and proued so to be.*

*But a faith without workes cannot be demonstrated to be a true faith.*

*Ergo. A Faith without workes is no true Faith.*

The maior is omitted as most eident of it selfe. Because there is no morall vertue, or grace of the *Holy Ghost* truly planted in the heart: but it may be knowne by some external actions, which it is apt to bring forth. Euen as life is knowne by breathing, or beating of the *Pulse*. The truth of an inuisible grace hath its demonstration in visible workes. But now for the *Minor S. Iames* proues that faith without obedience cannot appeare by any prooffe to be true faith. Which he doth in a dialogue betweene a true beleeuer and a *Hypocrite*. *Yea a man may say, thou hast faith, and I haue Workes shew mee thy faith without workes, and I will shew thee my faith by my workes.* That is. Thou saiest thou hast a true faith, though thou hast no *workes*: I say I haue true faith because I haue workes. Come wee now to the triall, and let it appeare who saiest true, thou or I. If thou saiest true, proue thy faith by something or other to be true. Shew me thy faith without thy workes. Workes thou hast none, whereby to shew thy faith, make it then appeare by something else. But thats impossible. Where *workes* are wanting, ther's no demonstration else whereby to iustifie the

*b' Extra* *of*  
*ipsum, or* *habet*  
*et ipsum, not*  
*in et ipsum,*  
The former  
reading is  
most agreea-  
ble to the ar-  
gument of the  
Apostle. So  
the Syriack  
Beza, the vul-  
gar, the  
French, our  
last Transla-  
tors. Pareus  
followes the  
other reading  
*in et ipsum.* &  
so pilicator.  
But they giue  
no good rea-  
son of this  
their so do-  
ing. The  
change was  
easie from  
*in et ipsum*  
into *et ipsum*

truth of *faith*. And therefore thou art driven to confesse that thou vainely boastest of that which thou hast not. But on the other side (saith the true beleever) I can make good, that which I say, prouing that my faith is true by my works. *I will shew thee my faith by my workes*. My sincere Obedience is a reall demonstration: that my beleife is no verball ostentation and vaine bragge. This prooffe of *S. James* is very conuincing; and gripes the *Consciences* of Hypocrites, smiting them with shame and confusion when they come to this triall; and so haue their false and fraudulent hearts laid open. But here it will bee asked what workes doe demonstrate the truth of faith, and also how they doe proue it. Whereto we answere workes are of two sorts. 1 *Ordinarily*, such workes of *Sanctity* and *Obedience*, as are required to a holy *Conuersation*. 2 *Extraordinarily*. viz. *Miracles*. Wee say *S. James* vnderstands the former, and those only: our aduersaries conclude both. But erroneously, for asmuch as *S. James* speakes not of the doctrine of *faith*, but of the grace of *faith*. The grace requires good workes of *Piety* and *Charity* as perpetually necessary for the confirmatiō of its truth. So doth not the doctrine of faith alwaies require *Miraculous workes* for the confirmation of its diuinity: But onely at the first *publication* thereof. Wherefore *Lorinus* is very *ridiculous*, who vpon this place tells vs, that they may iustly demand of vs *Heretiques* (For so they beduſt vs) *Miracles* for the confirmation of our new and false doctrine. Indeed were it new & false their request were not vnreasonable, that wee should make our doctrine credible by doing of miracles. But sure the *Jesuite* iudgeth of our doctrine by his owne, which did he not suspect for a new error, wee see no reason they should still require *miracles* for confirmation of an olde truth for our selues we seeke not the aide of a lying wonder.



wonder to uphold a true doctrine: nor doe wee count it any disgrace at all to our religion, that we cannot by our faith so much as cure a lame horse, as the *Iesuite* out of <sup>a</sup> *Eras*. scoffs at vs. Now surely if such a beast as *Bellarmino's* devout Mare, want helpe to set her on all foure, we cannot bee yet so well perswaded of that vertue of *Romish faith*, as to think that a *Frier* will doe more good at such a jadish miracle, then a *Farrier*. But whereas the *Iesuite* goes forward to require of vs the other sort of good workes, of *Piety & Charity* for the demonstration of our faith he hath reason so to doe, though not so much as he imagines, when hee chargeth vs with neglect of good workes and vnbridled licentiousnesse: Would to God we could cleere our practise from such neglect, as well as we can our doctrine from teaching it. But yet by their fauour, if we come to comparifon, we know no reason why we should runne behinde the dore, as more ashamed of our practises, then they may iustly bee of theirs, in which case we boldly bid him amongst them, that is without sinne to cast the first stone at vs. To proceed. Seeing workes of obedience are the *proofes* of a true *Faith*, it must be considered in what sort they proue it. For may not good workes be counterfeited as well as Faith? I answer. That in this triall the iudgement of *verity* and *infallibility* belongeth vnto God, who only knowes the heart and conscience, being able to discerne euery secret working of the soule, and so to iudge exactly whether or no all outward appearances come from inward *sincerity*. But for the iudgement of *Charity* that belongs to vs. If wee behold in any man the Workes of obedience to Gods will; of such a man we are to iudge that he hath true *Faith*. Though yet herein we must as farre as humane frailty will giue leaue, iudge also not according to appearance, but iudge righteous iudgement.

ment. Mens praesens must be examined: if *hypocrite* be. wray it selfe (as 'tis hard for a *Counterfeit* not to forget himselfe at some one time or other, if he be duly obserued) there *Charity* must not be blinde: it must see and censure it. 'Tis not a charitable, but a peruerse iudgement to call euil good: nor is it any offence to call that a barren or bad tree, that beares either no fruit at all, or none but bad; And thus of this second *Argument* of the *Apostle*, that these *Hypocrites faith* was vaine, because, when it comes to the prooffe, it cannot be iustified to be sound and good.

3 The third Argument is v. 19. from the example of the *Diuels* themselves, in whom there is a faith without workes, as well as in *hypocrites*: and *ergo* it is in neither of them a true Faith. The Argument is brought in to confute a cauill which the *hypocrite* might make against the former reason. True might he say, I cannot shew my *Faith* by my workes: yet for all that I haue a true faith. And why? Because I beleue the Articles of *Religion*, that there is one God, with the rest. Hereto the *Apostle* replies. That such a beliefe is not a true *Christian faith*, because it is to be found euen in the *Diuels*. The Argument runnes thus.

*That faith which is in the Diuels is no true Christian Faith.*

*But a bare assent to the Articles of Religion without Obedience is in the Diuels. Ergo.*

*A bare assent without obedience is no true Christian Faith.*

The *Maior* of this *Argument* will easily be granted. That the *Diuels* haue not that true Faith which is required of a *Christian Man* to his saluation. The *Minor* is also euident. That the diuels doe beleue the Articles of *Christian Religion*. *St James* instances in one for the rest, namely the *Article*

of

of the *Godhead*, whereto the diuels assent as well as *Hypocriticall men*. *Thou beleuest that there is one God*, saith the true beleuer to the *hypocrite*, pleading that hee beleued the Articles of faith. *Thou doest well*. 'Tis a laudable and good thing to acknowledge the truth of Religion. But withall thou must knowe that the diuels deserue as much commendation for this beleefe, as thou doest. *The Diuells also belieue*. Euen they confesse the truth of that and the other *Articles of Religion*. An evident prooffe whereof is this, that *they tremble* at the power, wrath, and iustice of God, and the remembrance of the last iudgement, which did they not belieue, they would not feare: but now they expect it with horrour, because they knowe it will come vpon them. Whence 'tis plaine that the Faith of *Hypocrites* and Diuels is all one, neither better then other, both vnfruitfull to bring forth obedience, both vnprofitable to bring vnto saluation, and therefore neither of them that true faith, which is *Christian* and sauing. This argument of the *Apostle*, pincheth our Aduersaries sore, who stiffely maintaine that *S<sup>t</sup> James* speakes of a true, though of a dead faith. For they cannot for shame say that there is a true faith in the diuells & damned Spirits. But yet *S. James* hath concluded that they haue that dead faith which *Hypocrites* boast of. What then? Then a dead faith is no true faith, as our <sup>a</sup> aduersaries affirme it is. Wherefore to helpe themselues, they deny that it is one & the same dead faith, which is in Hypocrites and euill Spirits. a Tell. lib. 1. de iustif. cap. 15. Indeed *ex parte obiecti*, they grant that the faith of diuells is as true and *catholique* as that of wicked men, because they both belieue the same things. And also in regard of the *effects*, they grant their faith to be alike, because both bee vnfruitfull. But not *ex parte subiecti*, so they say there's much difference. The faith of diuels is of our sort, and the faith of Hypocrites

*Hypocrites* of another. But here they make a little to bold with the blessed *Apostle*, ouerturning the force of his argument, to vphold their owne fancy. The *Apostle* proues against *Hypocrites* that their idle faith without obedience is not true sauing faith. Why? Because the diuels idle faith destitute of obedience is no true sauing faith. But now. Is the faith of diuels and hypocrites of the same kinde and nature, Yea, or no? No, they be not, they be of a diuerse nature, say the aduersaries. Let it be then considered, what force there is in the *Apostles* argument, *Faith without workes in diuels saues them not. Ergo faith without workes in wicked men, saues them not.* Might not one prompted by a *Iesuite*, reply vpon the *Apostle*. Nay by your leaue, your argument is inconsequent, because you doe not dispute, *ad idem*. Faith in the diuels is of one kinde, Faith in *Hypocrites* is of another: and therefore though faith without workes cannot saue diuels; yet faith without workes may saue men. Thus were the *Apostles* argument laid in the dust, if these mens opinions may stand for good. But would you knowe what distinction these men make betweene the faith of Diuels and wicked men, which *S. James* takes for the same. T is thus. First the faith of euill men is free, the faith of diuels is compelled and extorted from them by a kinde of force. So <sup>b</sup> *Bellarmino* [*Fides hominum malorum libera est, captivante nimirum pia voluntate intellectum in obsequium Christi: Fides vero Demonum est coacta, & extracta ab ipsarum evidentia. Quod insinuat idem Iacobus dicens. Demones credunt, & contremiscunt. Nos enim non credimus contremiscentes, id est, inuiti & coacti, sed sponte & libenter.* Wicked men beleeue freely and willingly. Why? Because their pious and godly will captiuates their vnderstanding to the obedience of *Christ*, so causing it to assent vnto the truth. The Diuels beleeue

*b. 7. supra.*

beleue vpon compulsion, being forced to it by the evidence of the things themselves. Which Saint *James* intimates, *They beleue and tremble*: that is, they beleue against their wills. Is not this a shamelesse *Iesuite* that will say any thing to patch vp a broken cause? For bee not these absurd contradictions to say, that wicked men haue godly wills, that by a pious motion of the will, their vnderstanding is captivated to the obedience of Christ, and yet they be *hypocrites* and wicked men still. No man can relish such assertions; who knows how averse and fromward the will of men is to embrace any thing that is of God, till such time as it be regenerate by sanctifying grace. It is therefore without all reason, to affirme that wicked men beleue willingly, and 'tis against all experience, which shewes that vngodly men are vtterly as vnwilling to beleue any truth that makes against them in any kinde whatsoeuer; as a *Beare* is to bee brought to the *stake*. Indeed in matters that like them, or such as bee of an indifferent nature, neither fauoring nor crossing their corruptions, they'll be apt to beleue, though not out of a pious affection, as the *Iesuite* dreames: but out of selfe-loue and other *selfe considerations*. But take them in any other point of *Religion*, that doth any way grate vpon their wicked affections, all the perswasion and instruction in the world, cannot worke them to a beleife of it, till the *Conscience* (spite of their hearts) bee conuicted by some notable euidence of the truth. Now what else can be said of the diuels; who will as willingly beleue what makes for them, (if any thing did) or what makes not against them; as any wicked man can doe? And they are as vnwilling to beleue any thing, that makes against them, as any wicked man is. Nor would they beleue it, did not the cleerenesse of diuine *Reuelations* conuince them of the certaine truth thereof. So that there is no

6 Becausa.

difference at all in this respect, as the one, so the other beleue vnwillingly; as diuels, so wicked men beleue with trembling. The diuels indeed with greater horror, as their beleefe and knowledge is alwaies more distinct then Mans: but yet men with horror too, when their consciences by fits are awakned to behold the woes, that are comming vpon them. Vnto this difference of *Belharminie* others adde two more. Namely: 1 *That the faith of diuels is naturall, that of wicked men supernaturall and infused.* 2 *That the faith of diuels is dishonest, the faith of wicked men is an honest faith.* Whereto we say thus much. That touching the first difference, we grant indeed that the Faith of the diuels is not *supernaturall* except it be in regard of the *object*. The faculties which they receiued in their creation are not so far corrupted in them: but that they are able to assent vnto, and apprehend diuine reuelations without further helpe, then of their owne naturall abilities. Man in his fall sustained greater losse in the spirituall powers of his soule, and therefore stands in need of helpe. Which helpe is afforded euē vnto the vngodly; but this is by ordinary illumination, not by speciall infusion of any sanctifying grace. Enlightned they are aboue the ordinary pitch of naturall blindness: but not aboue that whereto a meere naturall vnderstanding may be aduanced. Yea were mans vnderstanding raised vp to that perfection which is in diuels: this were more then Nature, yet lesse then grace. This common gift of illumination bestowed on wicked men, but not on diuels, is no prooofe that their faith is of a diuerse kinde. As to the last difference we are not so farre studied in moralities, as to conceiue wherein the dishonesty of the diuel's faith, and the honesty of Hypocrites faith doth lye. To ordinary vnderstanding it seemes every way as honest and commendable a matter, for a wicked

ked fiend, as for a wicked man, to beleive what God reueals vnto him. If not, we must expect to bee further informed by these *Iesuites*, men that are better read in that part of *Ethicks* whether diabolicall or hypocriticall.

4 This of the *Apostles* third Argument. We come to the fourth. 4. Arg. of S. Iames,

The fourth Argument is contained in the 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. verses. Before which the *Apostle* repeates his maine conclusion. That faith without obedience is a false & dead faith. *But wilt thou knowe, O a vaine man (or hypocrite) that faith without workes is dead?* v. 20. For the convincing of him further, hee proceeds to a new Argument to proue it vnto him.

a man as an empty Vessell without liquor

The Argument is this.

*That faith which will not iustifie a man is a false & dead faith.*

*But the faith which is without workes will not iustifie a Man. Ergo*

*'Tis a dead and a false faith.*

The *Maior* the *Apostle* omits as most euident of it selfe. The *Minor* hee proues by an induction of two Examples. Thus.

*If Abraham and Rahab were iustified by a working faith, then that faith which is alone without workes will not iustifie.*

*But Abraham and Rahab were so iustified, viz. by a working faith. Ergo*

*Faith without workes will not iustifie a man.*

The reason of the consequence is manifest. Because as *Abraham* & *Rahab*: so all other must be iustified. The meanes of iustification and life, were euer one and the same for all men. Which also the *Apostle* intimates in that clause v. 21. *Was not our father Abraham, &c.* implying that as the Fa-

ther, so also the children, the whole stocke and generation of the Faithfull, were and are still iustified by one vniforme meanes. The two instances the *Apostle* vrges, that of *Abraham*, v. 21, 22, 23. that of *Rahab*, v. 25. The *conclusion* which equally issues from them both, hee interserets in the middelt, after the allegation of *Abrahams example*, v. 24. I shall goe ouer them as they lye in the Text.

In the example of *Abraham*, the *Apostle* v. 21. sets downe this *proposition*. *That Abraham was iustified by a working faith*. For this interrogatiue: *Was not our father Abraham iustified by workes?* Mult bee resolued into an affirmatiue *Abraham our father was iustified by workes*. That is a *working faith*. Which proposition the *Apostle* confirmeth by it's parts. 1. Shewing that *Abrahams* faith was an operative faith declared and approued by his workes. Secondly, proving that by such a working faith *Abraham* was iustified in Gods light. That the faith of *Abraham* was operative, full of life and power to bring forth *Obedience* vnto God, the *Apostle* alleageth one instance instead of all the rest to proue it. And that is that singular worke of *Obedience* vnto Gods command. *When hee offered up his sonne Isaac vpon the Altar*. Many other workes there were performed by *Abraham* abundantly iustifying the trugh of his faith: But the *Apostle* chooseth this about all other, as that worke which was of purpose entoynd him by God for a triall of his faith. Wherein *Abraham* mightily ouercomming all those strong temptations to disobedience & infidelity, made it appeare, that his faith was not an idle, dead, and empty *Speculation*, but an actiue and working grace. Wherefore the *Apostle* addes, v. 22. *Seest thou how faith wrought with his workes, and by workes was faith made perfect?* That is, as in other workes of that holy *Patriarch*, so specially in that sacrificing his



his son, all that can see, may plainly behold, the strength & life of his faith. *Faith wrought with his workes.* That is, His faith directed & supported him in the doing of that work, as the *Apostle Paul* expounds it, *Heb. 11. 17. By faith Abraham offered up Isaac*: that worke had not beene done, if faith had not wrought it. In every circumstance thereof *faith* did all in all from the beginning of the worke to the end. This interpretation is most simple and generally receiued. *Faith wrought with*: That is, In or by his workes, vnto the performance wherof the force of faith was in speciall manner assisting. *Pareus* reads the words by a *time*, *πιστις συνεργησεν τοις ἔργοις*, (that is) *ἡ πίστις ἡ σὺν τοις ἔργοις ἤγειρεν* (*scil.*) *τὴν δικαιοσύνην*, i. e. *Faith being with his workes wrought. What? his Iustification.* But his construction seemes somewhat hard and not necessary for this place. The other sense is much plainer, shewing vs by or with what vertue *Abrahams* workes were wrought, viz. By the vertue of his *faith*, which in most powerfull manner incited and inabled him to obey. The *Apostle* goes forward, *And by workes was faith made perfect*. That is declared to bee perfect. <sup>b</sup> For workes did not perfect *Abrahams faith essentially*, in as much as long before this time, it was perfect, as is plaine in that *Abraham* was iustified by it 25 yeares before the oblation of his sonne *Isaack*, and also by the strength of his faith had done many excellent workes and obtained great blessings at the hand of God. So that the offering vp of *Isaack* was not the cause but a fruite of the perfection of *Abrahams faith*, the great difficulty of that worke shewed the singular perfection of that *Grace* which was able so to encounter and conquer it. The goodnesse of the fruite doth not worke, but declare the goodnesse that is in the tree; the qualities of the fruits alwaies depending vpon the nature of the tree: but not on the

<sup>a</sup> As In other words vsed by this *Apostle* viz. *κατασκευασμένη*, cap. 2. v. 6. *κατασκευασμένη*, chap. 2. v. 13. *κατασκευασμένη*, chap. 4. 11. <sup>b</sup> As the *Angel* expounds *Gen. 22. 12.* Now I knowe that thou fearest God: seeing or my sake thou hast not spared thine onely sonne.

contrary. Thus then the first part of the proposition is plainly proued by the *Apostle*. That *Abrahams* Faith was a liuely and working Faith declaring and approuing its own truth by the works of his *Obedience*.

The next part. Namely. *That Abraham was iustified in Gods sight, by such a working faith*, he proues. 1. By a Testimony of Scripture. 2. By an effect or consequent thereof. Both are expressed in the 23. v. The first in these words. *And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith. Abraham beleued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousness*. The application of this testimony is very heedfully to be obserued, because it serues excellently for the clearing of the *Apostles* meaning, when hee saith wee are iustified by workes. *And the Scripture was fulfilled* saith *S. Iames*. When? At the time that *Isaack* was offered. But was it not fulfilled before that time? Yes. Many yeares, when the promise of the blessed seed was made vnto him, as appears *Gen. 15. 6*. VVence this testimony is taken. How was it then fulfilled at the oblation of *Isaack*? Thus. The truth of that which was verified before, was then againe confirmed by a new and euident experiment. Well. Thus much is plaine enough. But here now the difficulty is, how this Scripture is applied vnto the *Apostles* former dispute. In the 21. v. He saith that *Abraham* was iustified by. VVorkes when hee offered *Isaack*. How proues he, that he was so iustified? VVhy by this testimony. Because the Scripture was fulfilled at that time, which saith, *Abraham beleued God, &c.* Marke then the *Apostles* argument. *When Abraham offered Isaack the scripture was fulfilled which saith Abraham was iustified by faith*. For that's the meaning of that Scripture. *Ergo, Abraham when hee offered Isaack was iustified by workes*. This at first sight seemeth farre fet, and not onely besides, but quite contrary

the *Apostles* purpose to proue hee was then iustified by  
 ces, because the scripture saith, he was then iustified by  
 b. But vpon due consideration, the inference appears  
 : euident, and the agreement easie, The *Apostle* and  
*Scripture* alleaged, haue one and the same meaning:  
 scripture saith. He was iustified by faith, meaning, as  
 inesse, a working faith fruitfull in obedience. S. *James*  
 nes the very same, saying, that hee was iustified by  
 ces, that is *Metonymically* by a working faith. And there-  
 the *Apostle* rightly alleadgeth the Scripture for confir-  
 on of his assertion: the Scripture witnessing. *That by*  
*h he was iustified*, the *Apostle* expounding what man-  
 of *Faith* it meanes. Namely a faith with workes or a  
 xing faith. So that the *application* of this testimony vnto  
 time of offering vp of *Isaack* is most excellent: because  
 it appeared manifestly what manner offaith it was,  
 refore God had accounted him iust in former times.  
 bout this *Metonymy* it appeares not. that there is any  
 : in the application of this Scripture and the argument  
 thence. The Scripture witnesseth that *Abraham* was  
 iustified by Faith. *Ergo* 'tis true, that he was then iustifi-  
 7 workes. What *consequence* is there in this argument  
 pt wee expound S. *James* by that *metonimie*, Workes,  
 is a working *Faith*? And so the argument holds firme.  
 : it otherwise, as our aduersaries would haue it, or, to  
 ke truth, according to the former interpretation of our  
 ces; it breeds an absurd construction either way. *Abra-*  
 in offering *Isaack* was iustified by workes that is, *secundâ*  
*ficatîone* of good hee was made better. How is that  
 ied? By scripture. Because the *Scripture* saith. That  
 at time he was iustified by faith. That is, *primâ* *Iustifi-*  
*me* of bad he became good. Is not this most apparant

Non-

*Non-sence.* Again according to the interpretation s of our diuines, *Abraham* at the offering vp of *Isaac* was iustified by workes (that is, say they) declared iust before men. How is that proued? By Scripture. Because the Scripture saith. That at that time, he was iustified by faith. That is, accounted iust in Gods sight. In which kinde of arguings I must confesse I apprehend not how there is any tolerable consequence: Wherefore wee expound *S. Iames* metonymically, putting the effect for the cause, workes, for a working faith, as the necessary connexion of the text enforced vs. Nor is there any harshnesse at all, nor violent straining in this figure, when two things of necessary and neere dependance one vpon the other, (*as workes, and a working faith*) are put one for another. Neither haue our aduersaries more cause to complaine of vs for this figuratiue interpretation of workes, then we haue of them for their figuratiue interpretation of faith. For when wee are said to be iustified by faith, they vnderstand it *dispositiue & meritorie* not *formaliter* faith in it selfe is not our sanctification, nor yet the cause of it. But it merits the bestowing of it, and disposeth vs to receiue it. Let reason iudge now, which is the harsher exposition. Theirs? *Faith iustifies* (that is) *Faith is a disposition in vs deservuing that God should sanctifie vs by infusion of the habit of Charity.* Or ours? *Workes iustifie*, that is, *the Faith whereby wee are acquitted in Gods sight, is a working Faith.* Thus much of this Testimony of Scripture prouing that *Abraham* was iustified by a true and working Faith.

In the next place the *Apostle* shewes it by a visible effect or *Consequent* that followed vpon his iustification expressed in the next words: *And hee was called the friend of God.* A high prerogative, for God the *Creator* to reckon of a poore mortall

mortall man as his familiar friend ; but so entire & true was the faith of *Abraham*, so vpright was his heart, that God not only gratioſly accounted it to him for *Righteouſneſſe*: but alſo in token of that gratioſ acceptance entered into a league with *Abraham* taking him for his eſpeciall friend and confederate ; A league offenſiue and deſenſiue. God would be a friend to *Abraham* [*Thou ſhalt be a bleſſing*] & a friend of *Abrahams* friends. *I will bleſſe them that bleſſe thee*; and an enimie of *Abrahams* enimies : *I will curſe them that curſe thee*. Which league of friendſhip with *Abraham* before the offering vp of *Iſaack* was therevpon by ſolemne proteſtation and oath renewed, as wee haue it, *Gen. 22. verſe 16. &c.*

Thus wee haue this firſt example of *Abraham*. From thence the *Apoſtle* proceeds to a generall conſclusion in the next verſe (24) *See then how that by workes a man is iuſtified, and not by faith only*. That is, therefore it is euident. That a man is iuſtified by a working faith: not by a faith without workes. Which *Metonymicall* interpretation is againe confirmed by the inference of this conſclusion vpon the former verſe. The ſcripture ſaith, *That Abraham beleeued God and it was imputed vnto him for righteouſneſſe*. Ergo (ſaith *S. James*) *See how a man is iuſtified by workes, and not by faith only*. A man might here ſay. Nay rather. We ſee the contrary. That a man is iuſtified by faith only and not by workes. For in that place of Scripture there is no mention at all made of Workes. Wherefore of neceſſity we muſt vnderſtand them both in the ſame ſenſe. And ſo the conſclusion followes directly. That euery man is iuſtified by an active not an idle faith, becauſe the Scripture witneſſeth that *Abraham* was iuſtified by the like faith. Our aduerſaries collection then from this place. [*That faith and workes*

be companions in iustification, wee are iustified partly by faith, partly by workes ] is vaine & inconsequent. For when the *Apostle* saies, *A man is iustified by workes & not by faith only.* his meaning is not, that workes and faith are two co-ordinate causes by their ioint-force working our iustification; but the *Apostle* vtterly excludes faith onely from iustification, and attributes it wholly vnto workes. For by *πιστι μόνῃ Faith only*, he vnderstands *faith* alone, that faith which is *κατ' ἑαυτὴν*, v. 17. alone, solitary, by it selfe, without workes. And such a dead faith whereof these *hypocrites* boasted, *S<sup>t</sup> James* excludes wholly from justifying of a man. *I say then that he is not iustified by faith only: but that he is iustified by workes.* That is a working faith that is fruitfull in Obedience.

Example.

The *Apostle* goes forward from the example of *Abraham* vnto that of *Rahab*, verse 25. *Likewise was not Rahab the Harlot iustified by workes?* That is in the same manner as *Abraham*: so also *Rahab* was iustified by a working faith. Which appeared to be so by that which shee did *when shee receaued the messengers*; entertained the two spies which were sent to search the land, lodged them in her house without discouering them. And when by accident they were made knowne, hid them secretly vpon the roofoe, and afterwards *sent them out another way*, conueied them away priuily, not by the vsuall, but by another way (that is) through the window letting them downe ouer the wall by a cord, as the story hath it. *Ios. 2.* In this dangerous enterprise, wherein this weake woman ventured her life in succouring the enmiies of her *King* and *Country*: it appeares plainly that shee had a strong and liuely faith in the *God of Israel*: & that the confession which shee made with her mouth to the spies [ *The Lord your God, he is the God in Heauen above and* in

*in the earth beneath. Iosb. 2. 11.*] proceeded from a truly believing heart, inſomuch as her words were made good by workes, that followed them. Wherefore the Apoſtle juſtly parallels theſe two examples of *Abraham* offering his ſonne; and *Rahab* in the kinde vſage of the *ſpies*, becauſe both thoſe facts were ſingular trialls of a lively faith which was able in that ſort to overcome what was hardeſt to bee conquered, viz. Naturall affection. In *Abraham* both fatherly affection to the life of a deere and only ſonne: and in *Rahab* the naturall loue to ones country and a mans owne life did all ſtoope and giue way, when once true faith commands obedience. Here againe our aduerſaries trouble themſelves, and the Text with needleſſe *ſpeculations* telling vs, that now the Apoſtle hath altered his cliſſe, and is gone from the ſecond iuſtification in *Abrahams* example, to the firſt iuſtification in this of *Rahab*. That *Rahab* was conuer- ted at this time of receiuing the *ſpies* being made a believer of an infidell, a good woman of a bad. That ſhee by this good worke did expiate her former finnes and merited the grace and fauour of God, notwithstanding that ſhee committed a *veniall ſinne* in handling of the buſineſſe, telling a downe-right lye, which though ſhee ſhould not haue done; yet it hindred not the meritoriouſneſſe of the worke, with ſuch other fond imaginations peruerſing the ſimplicity of the truth. But firſt they are not agreed among themſelves whether the Apoſtle doe in that ſort ſhift from one *Iuſtification* to another. *Bellarmino* affirms it and many moe. But others deny it, as may be ſeene in *Lorinus* his expoſition of the 21. y. of this *Chapter*. And were they agreed vpon it, ſure I am they ſhould diſagree from the Apoſtle, who makes this ſecond inſtance of the ſame nature with the former. *Opolus*. In like manner ſaith he, was *Rahab* iuſtified: viz. as *Abraham*

was. Again when they say *Rahab* became a true beleiever at that time of receiuing the *spies*, not before, 'tis more then they can proue. By the circumstances of the story it appears plainly, that she beleeued before they came, by the relation of the great workes which God had done for his *people*, and the promises that were made vnto them, that they should possesse *Rahabs* country. This bred feare in others: but faith in her, by the secret working of the *holy Ghost*: See *Ioshua* 2. 9. &c. And certainly; (had shee not had *Faith*, before the *spies* came, who can thinke she would haue giuen entertainment to such dangerous persons? But shee knewe them to bee the seruants of the God of *Israel* in whom shee beleued; and therefore by this <sup>a</sup> faith shee receaued them peaceably; though Enemies of her country. Lastly to that of the *Meritoriousnesse* of the worke of *Rahab*, to deserve *Grace* and *Life eternall*; we reiect it, not only as a vaine but an impious conceit, which neuer entred into the humble hearts of the Saints of old: but hath beene set on foot in the last corrupt ages of the world by Men drunken with selfe loue, and admiration of their owne *Righteousnesse*.

<sup>a</sup> Heb. xi. 31.

Thus we haue these two examples whereby the *Apostle* hath proued sufficiently, that the faith which is separated from obedience, will not iustifie a man, & therefore that it is a dead faith, and not a true liuing faith according as was proposed, v. 20. Now for a close of this whole dispute he againe repeats that conclusion, adding thereto a new similitude to illustrate it by in the last verse of the chapter. *For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without workes is dead*, that is, *As the body without the spirit*. i.e. the *Soule*, or the *Breath* and other *Motion* (is dead) *unable* to performe any liuing action whatsoeuer: *So faith without workes is dead*; that is, utterly vnable to performe these liuing actions, which belong



belong vnto it. What are those? Two. 1. To repose it steadfastly vpon the promise of life in *Christ*, which is the proper immediate liuing Action of faith. 2. To iustifie a Man in the sight of God, which by a speciall priuiledge is the *consequent* of the former. These liuing actions cannot be performed by that *Faith* which is dead, being destitute of good workes. That *faith* which hath not power to bring forth obedience, is thereby declared to be a dead faith, deuoid of all power to embrace the promise with confidence & reliance as also to iustifie. A man would thinke this were plaine enough, & needed not to be troubled with any further Cavillations. But 'tis strange what a coile our aduersaries make with this similitude, writhing and straining it to such conclusions as the *Apostle* neuer intended. Hence they gather:

1. That as the soule giues life to the body, as the forme of the body: so workes giue life to *Faith*, as the forme of it.
2. That as the body is the same true Body without the soule and with it: so *Faith* is one and the same true faith without workes and with them, which are nothing but *sophisticall speculations* besides the purpose of the text. The *Apostle* intends nothing but to shew the *necessity* of the *Copulation* of a liuing faith and obedience together: by the similitude of the like necessity of the vnion of a liuing body, and the Soule. But his purpose is not to shew, that the manner of their *Connexion* is the same, that iust in euery point as the soule is to the Body, or the body to the Soule: so workes are vnto faith, and faith vnto workes. It sufficeth to his intent, that as in the absence of the soule, the body: so in the absence of obedience, faith is dead. But thence it followes not, that workes by their presence doe the same thing to *Faith*, as the Soule to the body by its presence; or that faith in the absence of workes remaines the same; as the body

doth in the absence of the soule. If wee must needs bee tied to the strict termes of the Similitude: let vs a little examine the comparifon, and we shall see our aduerfaries all fly off first from it. Let the comparifon be first thus. Betweene the Body and the soule, Faith and VWorkes as the termes bee in the Text.

*As the Body without the soule is dead: because the soule giues life. i.e. sense, breathing, and all other motion to the body.*

*So faith without workes is dead, because workes giue life vnto faith.*

But now this comparifon will not runne on all foure. For *Workes* are not vnto *Faith* as the *Soule* is to the body; but as sense and motion is to the body. Seeing *VWorkes* are externall acts, not internall habits: and so are proportionable not to the *soule*, but to the liuing actions thence issuing. Wherefore 'tis as absurd to say, that workes giue life vnto *faith*, as 'tis ridiculous to affirme, that *Sense* and *Motion* giue life to the body, which are not causes; but effects and signes of life. Therefore when faith without workes is dead, 'tis not spoken in that sense, because *workes* giue life to Faith, as the *Soule* doth to the Body. Let then the comparifon bee thus. Betweene the body and the Soule. Faith and Charity.

*As the body without the Soule is dead, because the Soule is the forme of the body, and giues life to it.*

*So faith without Charity is dead, because Charity is the Forme of Faith, and giues life to it.*

But neither will the comparifon hold vpon these termes, For 1. our Aduerfaries here put in *Charity* the habit, for *workes* the act: which is more then themselues ought to doe, seeing they will tie vs at short bitts, to the very letter of the Text. For though we can bee content to admit that  
inter-

interpretation, would they admit of the *Apostles* plaine meaning, and not straine for *querkes*: yet seeing they argue so precisely from the words of the comparison, they must not now haue liberty from vs to goe from them, but bee content to take the words as they lie in the text; and make their best of them. Yet seeing 'tis most senselesse to make Workes (that is) externall Actions the forme of faith an internall habit: let them take *Charity* instead of them, an internall habit likewise. Will it be any better now? belike so. Then 'tis thus. *As the soule is the forme of the body: so charity is the forme of faith, and as the soule giues life and action to the body, so charity vnto Faith.* Will they stand to this? No. Here againe they fly off in both *Comparisons*. Charity is one habit, Faith another distinct betweene themselues, and therefore they deny, as there's good reason, that *Charity* is either the *Essentiall forme* of faith, as the soule of the liuing body: or the *accidentall forme*, as whitnesse of *Paper*. They say 'tis only an *externall forme*. But this now is not to keepe close to the *Apostles* comparison, but to runne from it at their pleasure, when they fall vpon an absurdity in pressing of it so strictly. *The Soule is no externall, but an internall Essentiall Forme, and therefore Charity must be so, if all runne round.* Againe doth *Charitie* giue life or liuing actions vnto faith as the soule doth vnto the Body? Neither dare they hold close to this comparison. For the proper worke or action of faith is to assent vnto the truth of diuine reuelations, because of Gods authority as themselues teach. Whence now comes this assent? From the *Habit of Faith*, or of *Charity*? They grant that it comes immediatlie from the *Habit of Faith*, which produceth this action, euen when its seuered from *Charity*. Then 'tis plaine that it is not *Charity* that giues life to faith, which can performe the pro-

per action that belongs to it, without 'its helpe. How then doth *Charity* giue life vnto *Faith*? For this, they haue a silly conceit. *Charity giues life*, that is *Merite* vnto *Faith*. The beleefe, or assent vnto diuine truth is *meritorious* if it be with *Charity*. If without, then 'tis not meritorious. This is a fine toy, wherein againe they runne quite from the *comparison* of the *Aposle*. For the *Soule* giues liuing actions to the Body, not only the *quallifications* of the actions: and so *Charity* is not like the soule, because it giues only the *qualification* of *Merit* vnto the action of *Faith*, and not the action it selfe. Beside. A most vaine interpretation it is, without any ground from Scripture, to say a liuing faith, (that is) a *meritorious faith*: when euen in common sense, the life of any habit consists onely in a power to produce those actions, that naturallie and immediatlie depend vpon that *Habit*. And what Reason is there in the world why the *Habit* of *Charity* should make the actions of *Faith* *meritorious*, or why *Charity* should make *Faith* *meritorious*, rather then *Faith* make *Charity* *meritorious*, seing in this life there is no such præminency of *Charity* about *faith*? Wherefore wee despise these *Speculative sophismes*, which with much faire glozing, our aduersaries draw from the text: but yet when all comes to the triall, themselves will not stand to the strict application of the *similitude*, because it breeds absurdities, which euen themselves abhorre. Now if they take liberty to *quallifie* and *interpret*, they must giue vs leaue to doe so too, or if they will not wee shall take it. To shut vp all, Their other collection is as weake as the former: namely. *A dead body is a true body. ergo a dead faith is true faith*. This argument forceth the *Similitude*, and so is of a force. In materiall things which haue a diuerse being from different *Causes*, it may hold. But 'tis not so in vertues and

and Graces. Truth and life are both *essentiall* to such *qualities*. True *Charity* is a living *Charity* (i. e.) active, as the *Apostle* himselfe proues. ver. 15. True Valour, and so of euery vertuous *quality*, if it be true, 'tis living and stirring in action: if it be otherwise, 'tis counterfeir, some other thing that hath only a shadow of it. All these tricks are put vpon the *Apostle* to peruert his plaine meaning: viz. That as it is necessary to the being of a living body that it bee coupled with the soule, so 'tis necessary to the being of a living true Christian *Faith*, that it bring forth *Workes of Obedience*.

### SECT. 7. CHAP. I.

*None can be iustified by their owne satisfaction for the transgression of the Law. A brieve summe of Popish doctrine, concerning humane satisfactions for sinne.*

**H**us wee haue a resolution of the dispute of *S. Iames*, together with such Cavils, as our Adversaries make vpon the seuerall passages thereof. By the whole order whereof it appeares sufficiently that *S. Iames* disputing against *Faith*, meanes thereby that false and bastard faith which *Hypocrites* pleased themselves withall instead of a true faith: and that disputing for workes, he meanes nothing but a working *Faith*. And it appeares also that the drift of the *Apostle* is not in this place to dispute directly of mans *Iustification*: but only to bring that in, as an argument to proue his principall Conclusion. *That faith without workes is dead, because it will not iustifie*. In some it's euident, that neither these *Apostles* doe disagree betweene themselves, nor yet either of them doe agree with our aduersaries in teaching *Iustification* by

the Workes of the Morall law. Of the impossibility of mans Iustification by which meanes, *Hitherto*.

a Conclusion  
proued,

The next *Proposition* is, that [*None can bee iustified by their owne satisfaction for the transgression of the Law.*] For this is the only way left for an offender to obtaine *iustification* and *Absolution*: viz: to alleadge that he hath satisfied for his offence committed; by doing or suffering so much as the party offended could in iustice exact of him. Which satisfaction being made, he is no longer debter vnto him, but deserues his absolution and his fauour, as if hee had not offended at all. Now then the *Question* is. *Whether a sinner may, by any thing done, or endured by himselfe, satisfie the iustice of God, and so obtaine absolution at the barre of Gods Iudgement.* Wee defend the negatiue. That it is impossible for a sinner, by any Action or passion of his owne to doe so much as shall be equiualent vnto the wrong which hee hath done vnto the glorious iustice of God: that therewith he may rest satisfied and exact no farther penalty. Which point is so euident vnto the Conscience of euery one that knowes himselfe to be, either a *Creature*, or a *Man*, or a *Sinner*; that it needs not any confirmation. If wee be considered as *Creatures*, ther's nothing that a finite strength in a finite time can performe, which can hold proportion with the offence of an infinite goodnesse and iustice, and the eternall punishment thereby deserued. Consider vs as men, so we are bound to fulfill the Law of God in all perfection, nor is there any thing so true, so honest, so iust, so pure, so worthy loue and good report: but the Law one way or other obliges vs vnto the thought and practise of it. So that besides our due debt of obedience, wee haue nothing to spare ouer and aboue, whereby to satisfie God for those Trespases that wee haue committed vpon his *honour* and *iustice*

Phil. 4. 8.  
Deut. 5. 6.

*iuslice.* Lastly consider vs as *Sinners*, so wee are tyed in a double obligation, 1. of punishment to be suffered for *sinne* committed. 2. Another of obedience to bee perpetually performed. Both these debts of punishment and obedience, are equally exacted of sinfull men, and *ergo* 'tis as absurd in diuinity to say, the obedience of the law or good workes will satisfie for the transgression of the law: as 'tis in ciuill dealing to accompt the payment of one band the discharge also of another. Wherefore every one that is not blinde & proud in heart will here be soone perswaded to relinquish all claime of heauen by his owne satisfaction, running vnto him only, who alone without the helpe of man or *Angell hath trodden the winepresse of the fiercenesse of Gods wrath, bearing our sinnes in his body on the tree, suffering the utmost, whatsoever was due to the punishment of them.* Our aduersaries in this businesse are at a stand, mistrusting their owne, yet not daring wholly to trust to *Christs* satisfactions. They will giue him leaue to haue his part, but, by his leaue, they will haue one share too in satisfying for sinnes. For they are a generation of men that are resolu'd to be as little beholding to God, as may be, for grace, or for glory. And if there be any article of religion wherein scripture and Reason would giue the honour of all vnto God, they looke at it with an euill eye, and cast about which way to thrust in themselves for copartners. 'Tis strange to see to what passe Pride and couetousnesse haue brought the doctrine of Satisfaction, as it is now taught and practised in the *Romish Church.* With your patience I shall take a short suruaie of it, that you may see whether of vs twaine rest our consciences vpon the surer and more stedfast *anchor*: wee that trust only to *Christs* satisfactions; or they that ioine their owne together with his.

The summe of their doctrine, as it is delivered vnto vs by the Councell of Trent. Sess. 6. cap. 14. 16. & Sess. 14. cap. 8. 9. with the Romish Catechisme part. 2. chap. 5. quest. 52. & seq. and explained at large by Bellarmine in his two booke *De Purgatorio* in his 4<sup>th</sup> booke *De Pœnitentia*, and his booke *De Indulgentiis*: is this. Sinnes are of two sorts.

- 1 Sinne committed before Baptisme: as Originall Sinne in all that are baptized infants: and actuall sinnes in those that are baptized at yeares of discretion.
- 2 Sinne committed after baptisme: when after the grace of the holy Ghost receiued in Baptisme men fall into sin, polluting the Temple of God, and grieving his spirit.

Touching the former sort of Sinnes, they are agreed that men are freed from them both the fault and punishment, by the merits and satisfaction of *Christ* only, without any satisfaction on our part. But now for sinnes after Baptisme, in the obtaining of Remission of them, *Christ* & we part stakes. Which copartnership is declared vnto vs in this manner. In these sinnes (wee must know) there are three things considerable.

- 1 The fault in the offence of Gods Maiesty, and violation of our friendship with him. Here they grant also, that man cannot satisfie for the fault, doing any thing that may appease Gods displeasure, and procure his loue. *Christ* only hath done this for vs, for whose only satisfaction, God of his mercy freely returnes into fauour and friendship with vs. But this must be vnderstood in a Catholique sense, viz: for fault of Mortall sinnes, as for Venial sinnes. God is but slightly angry with them, and so wee may satisfie him for fault thereof, both in this life, and in *Purgatory*.

- 2 The staine or corruption of sinne, called the reliques of Sin abiding in the soule. For the purging out of which, there



there is great force in such satisfactions, as are made by Prayers, Fastings, Almesdeeds, and other laborious workes, although the Heretiques say otherwise. That the abolishing of inherent corruption is by the gift of grace freely bestowed on vs by degrees, in the vse of all godly meanes.

- 3 The punishment of sinne, which after the fault is pardoned, remaines yet to be suffered. For although it bee true that God in some cases doth pardon both fault and punishment wholly, as in case of Martyrdome, which sweeps all cleane, and makes all reckonings euen, and although God might, if it had so pleased him, alwaies for Christ's sake haue pardoned the whole debt: yet Holy Mother Church hath determined, that hee doth not so vse to doe. But after that in mercy hee hath forgiven the fault: yet there's an after reckoning, and wee must come to coram for that punishment, by which his iustice is to receaue satisfaction. But (yee must knowe) the punishment of sinnes is twofold.

- 1 Eternall, is the destruction of soule & body in Hell fire to endure for euer.

Heere now Christ's satisfaction: comes in againe. By whose merits alone they grant, wee are deliuered from the eternity of the punishment of sinne. Which must be noted; that Christs satisfaction hath not eased vs of the substance of the punishment it selfe: but only in the continuance of it.

- 2 Temporall, to endure only for a time, whereof there are also two degrees.

- 1 One in this life, as namely all calamities and afflictions upon the Body, Soule, Name, Goods, &c. together with death the last and greatest of euills. All which are inflicted upon man, as punishments of sinne.

these some come vpon vs ineuitably, as death vpon all men, or as death in the wildernesse on the children of *Israel*, with the like punishments, certainly & irreuocably denounced. Now here's no remedy but patience, and that's an excellent remedy too. For (as the ghostly Fathers of *Trent* informe vs) *If they be borne willingly with patience, they be satisfactions for sinnes: but if unwillingly, they bee God's iust reuenge vpon vs.* Other some come, *Enstably.* And here such a course may be taken, that wee need not suffer the punishment it selfe: but we may buy it out and make satisfaction for it vnto God by other meanes. Which meanes are principally foure.

- 1 *By the vehemency of contrition, or inward sorrowe. which may be so intensiue as to satisfie for all punishments, both in this life and also in Purgatory.*
- 2 *By other outward laborious workes. whereby we may buy out the obligation to temporall punishments. Such workes are these.*

1. *Prayer with confession, Thankesgiuing, &c.* For, if we beleeue the *Catholique* Doctors 'tis a very good satisfaction to a Creditour, if the debter pray vnto him for the forgiuenesse of his debt. According to that Text. *Psalme 50.15: Call vpon mee in the day of trouble and I will deliuer thee.* Ergo, *Prayer* is a satisfaction for the punishment of sinne.

- 2 *Fasting, vnder which is comprehended the sprinkling of Asbes, wearing of haire cloth, whippings, going bare foot, and such other penall workes.* These also satisfie for sinnes as 'tis written *2. Sam. 12. Dauid fasted, lay vpon the ground and wept all night.* Therefore he satisfied for his sinnes of murther and adultery. And againe, *Paul* saith, *1. Cor. 9. 27. I beat downe my body.* That is, I whip and cudgell my selfe to satisfaction

tisfie for my finnes. And againe, *Luke, 18. 13. The Publican smote upon his breast, Ergo.* corporall chastisement is a good satisfaction for finnes.

3 *Almesdeeds: comprehending all kinde whatsoeuer workes of mercy.* These also buy out the punishments of sinne according to the Text, *Dan. 4. 24. Breake off thy sinne by righteousness, and thine iniquity by mercy towards the poore.* That is. By *Almesdeeds* satisfie for the temporall punishments of thy finnes. And againe, *Luke 11. 41. Give almes of that which you haue, and behold all things shall be cleane vnto you.* That is to say (in the language of Babel) The temporall punishment of sinne shall bee taken away. Now all such workes as these are either.

- 1 *Voluntarily vnderaken of our owne accord, as voluntary Pilgrimage, Scourgings, Fasts, Sackcloth, Weepings and Prayers of such a number and measure, with the like rough punishments, which wee take vpon our selues to pacifie God. All which being done with an intent to satisfie for the punishment of our finnes; must needs bee accepted of God Almighty for good payment: because in so doing, wee doe more then hee hath required of our hands.*

Now 'tis very pleasing to God to doe what hee bids vs not: or what he bids vs, to doe to another end of our devising. Hee therefore that voluntarily vndertakes such needlesse paines, giues God high *satisfaction*. According to the Text, *1. Cor. 11. 31. If we would iudge our selues, we should not be iudged.*

- 2 *Inioyned by the Priest.* Who by vertue of the Keyes committed vnto him might iudicially absolue the penitent from the whole debt, were it not thought fit vpon speciaall considerations to keepe back a part. Wherefore when hee hath

hath absolved him from the *fault and eternall punishment*, he bindes him vnto satisfaction for the *temporall punishment* and therefore he enioynes him what hee shall doe to buy it out. Let him goe visit the shrine of such and such a Saint, say so many *Aues* and *Pater nosters* before such an Image, whip himselfe so many times, fast so many daies, giue so much almes with such like penalties. And when he in humble obedience hath done these things commanded by the *Priests* then 'tis certaine his sinnes be satisfied for. For 'tis to be noted that in enioyning this *Canonicall satisfaction*, as 'tis called, the *Priest* and *God Almighty* be iust of the same minde. Looke how much the *Priest* enioines for *satisfaction*, God must be content to take the same, or else the *penitent's* conscience will not be quiet, because it may bee, God expected more to be done for *satisfaction*: then the party hath done by the *Priests* iniunction. But it is to bee supposed, that as the *Pope*, so euery *Priest* in his *Chaire of confession*, hath an infallible spirit, whereby hee is able exactly to calculate the iust proportion betweene the sinne and the punishment, & the price of the punishment, that so he may enioyne iust so much penance, as will buy it out; neither more lest the penitent be wronged: nor lesse, lest God be not satisfied. All which is trimly founded vpon that Text which saith. *what soeuer yee binde on earth shall be bound in heauen, and what soeuer yee loose on earth shall be loosed in heauen. Mat. 16. 19. and 18. 18.* That is, *Priests* may forgive the fault and retaine the punishment, and what satisfaction they enioyne on earth to expiate the punishment, that will God accept in heauen. Or else they be deceaued. This is the second meanes to satisfie for temporall punishments.

The 3. Meanes is by *Pardons and Indulgences*. Wherein the *superabundant merits of Christ and the Saints* are

out

out of the treasury of the Church granted by special grace of the Bp. of Rome vnto such as are liable to suffer the temporall punishment of their sinnes. So that they hauing got by his grant a sufficient portion of satisfactory workes, out of the common stocke, they are freed thereby from satisfying Gods iustice, by their own workes. Which is a rare priuiledge no doubt.

4. The fourth meanes is by another liuing mans satisfaction for them. For not only the superabundant workes of Christ and Saints departed: but the good workes of iust men alieue will satisfie for another, being done with that intent. So great is Gods clemency towards good Catholiques, that, though one man cannot confesse, nor be contrite for another, yet fauissie he may the Iustice of God for his sinnes. Both these meanes are groundd vpon pregnant places of Scripture. Gal. 6.2. Beare yee one anothers burthen, that is, satisfie one for another. Againe 2 Cor. 12.15. I will most gladly bestowe and be bestowd for your sake: that is, to satisfie for your sinnes. Againe. 2. Tim. 2.10. Asuffer all things for the Elects sake: that is, that my sufferings may be their satisfactions. So Col. 1.24. I reioice in my sufferings for you, and fulfill the rest of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church. That is. My sufferings with Christs sufferings make up a treasure for the Church, that such as want of their owne, may make use of his satisfaction and mine. Againe Rom. 12.15. Wee being many are one anothers Members. Ergo, Wee may impart satisfactory workes one to another, as one member doth beat to another. To conclude. 'Tis in our Creed. I belecue a communion of Saints. Ergo There is a communion of satisfactions. And so the point is very fitly proued. Whereby it appeares that the Children of the Romish Church are reasonable well prouided of

meanes to recompence Gods *Iustice*, and redeeme the Temporall punishment of their finnes in this life.

The other degree of the *temporall punishment* is in the *life to come*, namely, in *purgatory*, whereinto all they drop who die in *Veniall Sinne*, the fault whereof was not forgiven in this Life; or in *Mortall Sinnes*, the fault whereof was forgiven in this life; but full satisfaction was not made for the punishment before death. Such must fry a while in *Purgatory* longer or shorter time according as their Sinnes are more or lesse haynous; or as mens hearts on earth bee more or lesse pittifull towards them. But howeuer there they must be till the *Temporall punishment* of their *Sinnes* be fully suffered: or bought out by something else that may satisfie Gods iustice.

This *Punishment* of sinne inflicted in *Purgatory*, is twofold.

1 *Pana Damni. of Losse (viz.) of the beautifull visions of God, and ioyes of Heaven.*

2 *Pana sensu. of sense or smart. viz. The bitter paines of Gods wrath sensibly tormenting the Powers of the Soule, inflicted vpon them either immediately by God himselfe, or by the ministry of the diuels as his Instruments.*

For tis a doubt not yet resolued among the *Patrons* of *Purgatory*, whether the Diuels haue not to doe there also as well as in hell. But whether their tormentours bee diuels or not, this is agreed vpon, that the torment and punishment which the soules doe suffer in *Purgatory*, is for the substance of it the very same with the torments of Hell, differing only from it in continuance, those of *Purgatory* be *temporall*, these of Hell *eternall*. Well now, such as haue not bestirred themselues then well in this life to make all euen by full *satisfactions*, such must be arrested in the mid way to Heaven,

and cast into this *Prison*. Out of which two meanes there be to be deliuered.

1 *By suffering all this temporall punishment for so many yeares and dayes as tis to continue.* How many, that is, you must inquire of *S<sup>t</sup> Michael*, the *Church* knowes not that. But yet sure she is, that many *Soules* shall continue in *Purgatory* till the day of *Iudgement*, so there shall be the same period of the world, and of their torments. These haue a hard time of it; 'tis easier happily with others. But be it as 'twill be, such as these pay the utmost farthing, where they endure in the flames of *Purgatory*, so long till the time of their whole punishment be runne out. Then God is satisfied and they deliuered.

2 *By buying out this punishment by some other satisfactorie price.* For although God could so haue ordered it, that euery Soule being once in purgatory, should suffer all the Temporall punishments due: yet, he is content to bee intreated to commute *penance*, and take some other valueable consideration by way of *satisfaction* for this punishment. But this *satisfactory* payment cannot be made by the soules themselves: it must bee made by some on earth for them, which is done. 1 Either by laborious workes of any one iust and godly *Catholique*, whether he be a friend of the deceased, or other touched with a charitable pittie toward a poore soule. Who by store of deuout prayers, Almes, Masses, Pilgrimages, founding of Couents and Hospitals, &c. may procure a *gaole-delivery* for that soule for which hee intends those good workes. 2 Or by the *Pope* who is purfearer to the *Church*, and hath the treasure thereof vnder locke and key. He now, though he cannot directly absolue the *soules* in *Purgatory* from their punishment, as he can men liuing on the earth, yet hee may helpe them another

way by bestowing on them so much of the superfluous sufferings of Christ & of the Saints, that thereby Gods Iustice may bee satisfied, for the whole punishment, which otherwise they should haue endured. Yea such is the power of his *Indulgences* to infuse a vertue into such and such Altars, Shrines, Prayers, &c. that whosoever shall frequent such places or vse such prayers, all complements duly obserued: he may at his pleasure free 1. 2. 3. or more soules out of *Purgatory*. Nay did not quietnes coole the heat of his *Apostolicall Charity*, he might so bountifully powre out the Treasures of the Church vpon these Prisoners in *Purgatory*, that they should all haue enough to weigh downe the scales, and deserue a *passé-port* for *Heauen*. Such efficacie there is in that *Spiritual pick-locke* which the *Pope* hath in keeping. All which is very properly proued by the former places of Scripture, and others also, were it needfull now to alleadge them. But thus we see the *Catholiques* are every way furnished for *satisfactions*, that what *Christ* hath not done for them, they can doe for themselves, either to suffer and overcome the *Temporall punishments* of their Sinnes, or else, which is the easier course, to buy out that punishment at a valuable price of other *satisfactionary* workes, wherewith Gods iustice shall be abundantly contented. Now whereas those whom they terme *Heritiques*, cry out aloud that such *satisfactions* to Gods iustice, bee indeed no *Satisfactions* at all, because they are no waies equall vnto the offence committed: and so no full recompence of wrong, offered vnto God: for the assailing of this doubt, they giue vs this distinction very necessary to be obserued. Satisfaction is double.

- I. *Iustitia: ex rigore Iustitiæ, ad absolutam & perfectam Æqualitatem Quantitatis.* That is, There is a satisfaction of iustice consisting in a perfect equality betwene the



the offence and wrong, and the recompence made; when so much is done, or suffered, as the offended party can in iustice exact. Now they grant that man cannot satisfie God in this sort in rigour of Iustice. Only Christ hath satisfied so; for vnto such a satisfaction it is required that it be done.

1 *Ex proprijs.* By that which is our owne.  
 2 *Ex indebitis.* By that which is not debt of it selfe.  
 3 *Ad equalitatem.* By that which is of equall worth and value. Now none of these waies can our satisfaction passe in strict iustice. Because whatsoeuer wee haue, 'tis Gods free gift: whatsoeuer wee can doe, 'tis our due obedience, and when we haue done all, yet wee cannot by any finite act doe such honour to God, as shall beequall to that iniury wee haue offered to his infinite *Maiestie*. Even the right of Nature teacheth, as *Bellarmino* grants, that man cannot *paria reddere Deo*; giue him *quid pro quo*.

2 *Acceptationis facti ex gratia donante ad imperfectam Aequalitatem proportionis & ex condigno*, i. e. There is a satisfaction of favourable acceptance; wherein there is a kinde of imperfect proportion betwene the offence and the recompence; when so much is done or suffered; as God is content in gentlenesse to take for good satisfaction. Thus then a man may satisfie Gods iustice, because God giues him grace to doe so much as hee will accept for satisfaction. Which Grace is threefold:

1 *The Grace of Iustification*; whereby the holy Ghost dwells in vs, and wee are made members of Christ, and Christ is become our Head. By meanes of which union with Christ, and inhabitation of the Spirit, it comes to passe that our works haue a singular vertue. For Christ communicates vnto vs his satisfaction, and by merits of

*them, makes our workes meritorious and satisfactorie unto God,*

So that whereas all things whatsoever wee could haue done, were of no worth at all in the sight of God: now Christ hath deserued such a grace, for us that the spotted ragges of our righteousnesse and good workes being *tincta Christi sanguine* (i. e.) died in the bloud of Christ receaue such a colour, that they will passe for reasonable good cloth. In a word, our money is now good silver which before was but brasse. Againe, because the *holy Ghost* dwels in the iust, *Ergo* (as *Bellarmine* profoundly argues) *their workes proceeding from the holy Ghost haue[ quendam infinitatem ]* a kind of infinitesse in them, and thereby, *quandam aequalitatem*, a kinde of equality with the iniury which by sinning we offered unto God. Euen as a man may say, that a Fly or a Spider is a kinde of infinite Creature because 'tis of Gods making: & God yee knowe is infinite. This is the first Grace of *Iustification*. The second yee may call.

2. *The Grace of Euangelicall Counsailes.* For although God might of right challenge all our workes as due vnto him: yet so it is that he commands not all, but only perswads and exhorts vnto some. By which bounty of God, it comes to passe that wee haue certaine workes *Propria & indebita*, of our owne which we owe him not, and by these we only make *satisfaction*. Yea such is the bounty of God, that hee suffers vs to merit by those things which be of his free gift, and is willingly content that what we receaue at his hand, we giue it him backe againe for a satisfactory payment to his iustice. Which is very strange I tell you.

3. *Lastly one grace more God giues vs. Namely, when hee pardons the fault hee remoues the eternity of the punishment, and makes it temporall, that so it may be more easily*

*fully satisfied for.* All which particulars and *Privileges* are sure and certaine, because the *Catholique* Doctors haue firmly proued them out of their owne heads without the helpe of the *Scripture*. So then they are agreed. That our workes are not *satisfactorie in rigour of iustice*: but only in fauourable acceptance, by grace giuen to doe them, & Gods clemency in accepting them being done.

## CHAP. II.

*All sinne is remitted vnto vs wholly in the fault  
and punishment. For the onely satisf-  
faction of Iesus Christ.*



Hus I haue somewhat largely set forth vnto you the *Popish Doctrine* of *humane* satisfaction for sinne, wherein it is plaine to all that can see any thing, that their aime hath beene to lay a plot to delude mens soules & picke their *Purses*. It would require a large discourse to prosecute their Arguments, whereby they seeke to couer their fraud. But they are not of that moment, as to spend time about them, being to hasten to other matters. The summe of them all comes vnto this. 1. That those afflictions and temporall chastisements which God hath laid vpon his Children (for the Triall of their faith and patience, for their humiliation for sinnes past by hearty repentance, for their admonition for the time to come, for the example of others. &c.) they must needs bee, in these mens Imaginations, true *satisfactions* to Gods Iustice to expiate their sinnes past. 2. That such good workes as the godly haue performed for declaration of their *piety*; testification of their thankfulness vnto God; for to expresse the sorrow of heart; for to bring them

selues to a greater measure of true humiliation by much *Prayer, Fasting, &c.* for to obtaine victory over some corruption, and temptation; for to get some grace which they wanted; for to preuent or fit themselues for some iudgement feared; &c. All this now must be conceiued presently to be meritorious and satisfactorie to Gods iustice for Sin.

3 That such penance, as in the *Primitive Church* was enioyned vnto those that after their *Conversion* and *Baptisme*, relapsed againe to *Heathenisme*; or otherwise for such as for scandalous offences were excommunicated; I say that such Penance enioyned to these for testification of their hearty sorrow for their offence, and for satisfaction to the *Congregation*, before they might be againe admitted into it: must now bee turned into a direct and proper satisfaction for the sinne it selfe.

4 That such indulgence or fauour as was then sometimes vsed toward such relapsed and excommunicate persons (in remitting vnto them some part of their enioyned Penance vpon euident tokens of their vnfeined repentance) this is now by these men turned quite to another vse. Namely, to the freeing of men from further satisfaction to Gods iustice by applying vnto them certaine *phantasticall supererogations treasured vp in the Popes Cabinet*. These are the maine issues and errors of their disputes, wherein I will proceed no farther, but only lay downe one generall conclusion opposite vnto their doctrine, and so end this point with a few reasons, for the confirmation of the truth and confutation of this error. The Position is this.

*All sinne whatsoever, Originall or Actuell is remitted vnto vs wholly in the fault and punishment, as well Temporall as Eternall for the only satisfaction of Iesus Christ; & not any satisfaction made by vs vnto the iustice of God.*

For

For confirmation of this sacred truth deliuered vnto vs in the word and generally embraced by the *Reformed Churches* (yea by our aduersaries themselues when the *Agonies of Conscience*, the apprehension of *Death & Gods Iudgement* doe cleere vp their eyes, a little to behold the *vanity* of their poore *satisfaction*) obserue wee these Reasons.

First the innumerable testimonies of Scripture ascribing the remission of *Sinne*, only to the *mercy of God in Christ* crucified. That *Christ hath borne* <sup>a</sup> *our sinnes*; His blood hath <sup>b</sup> *purged* vs of all sinne; His death <sup>c</sup> *redeemed* vs from all iniquity; his <sup>d</sup> *stripes* healed vs; that he hath <sup>e</sup> *paid the arrears* or price of our Ransome; That God for his <sup>f</sup> *sake* hath forgiven vs our trespasses; Blotted out <sup>g</sup> *our sinnes*; Cast them <sup>h</sup> *behind his backe*; Forgotten <sup>i</sup> *them*; with store of the like sayings, ascribing the doeing away of all sinnes to the *Grace of God* through the *Satisfaction of Christ* without limiting it to any Sinne, or mentioning any *satisfactorie workes* of ours. Now what say our aduersaries to this? By a shift they turne of all *Scriptures* tending to this purpose. Thus *Christ hath satisfied for the fault of our sinnes*; and so reconciled vs vnto God, and for the eternity of the punishment: but hee satisfied not for temporall punishment: Wee must endure torments though but for a while. This is a meere *Cavill* without any apparent ground from such texts of Scripture; or necessary deduction from other. Wee deny it therefore as they affirme it. And that it may appeare to be but a forged diuice: Let vs inuert the distinction and we shall holde it with as good probability the other way. *Christ satisfied for the fault*, not for the punishments (say they.) Wee will goe contrary and say, *Christ satisfied for the punishment*: but not for the fault. Wee by our owne satisfaction must procure Gods fauour. Now let them object what they can against this: if wee lust to ca-

k Coll. 1. 20.

vill as they doe: it may be shifted off with as faire probability; as they doe our arguments on the other part. Let them name all the places that say, *Christ hath reconciled vs vnto God his father*. This is easily put off. *Christ hath reconciled vs*. That is *Christ deserued such grace for vs: that wee by our workes may reconcile our selues*. Iust as they say. *Christ hath satisfied*, that is: *procured grace for vs: that wee by our workes might satisfie*. Let them obiect, *Our workes can bee of no worth to appease Gods anger*. Wee will say. True. Of themselves they are not, but Christ hath merited that they should be of sufficient worth. Iust as themselves say vnto vs obiecting, that our workes be not of value to satisfie Gods Iustice. True say they. Of themselves they be not: but *Christ hath deserued for them to make them satisfactorious*. Thus if euery idle distinction not fortified by necessary deduction from Scripture might passe for a good answer, the certainty of Diuine Doctrine were soone shaken to pieces: and no *Position* so absurd, but would bee defended with much facility.

a Bell. de pen.  
lib. 4. cap. 1.

2 That assertion of theirs. Namely. *That the fault is forgiven and the punishment required*, is most false and absurd; euen in common sense. To pardon a fault & be friends and yet require full satisfaction; to forgive the debt, yet to exact the payment, be not these trimme kindneses? a Bellarmine tells vs, there be some offences of so grievous Nature: that satisfaction cannot bee made, but in a long time. Now in this case the party wronged may pardon the other, & be reconciled to him: yet the offender remaine still bound to make entire satisfaction for the wrong. But now the *Iesuite* doth not name any such case: neither indeed can doe. For suppose a subiect hath offended his Prince and the fault deserued 7 yeares close imprisonment for satisfaction. If the

Prince

Prince should say vnto him I pardon your offence, you haue my loue; but yet you shall lie by it to the last daie: were it not a mockerie, would any man thanke him for such a kinde-  
nesse? It is to be thought the *Iesuites*, the incendiaries of Christendome would not thanke Christian princes for such a curtesie, if they should pardon them their fault, and hang them vp. The like absurditie there is in this, when they say; That after the fault pardoned; yet in this life and in *Purgatory*, the temporall punishment must be suffered. For wherefore must it be suffered? For *satisfaction* say they, to what? To Gods Iustice. For what now? Is it for the fault and offence committed? No, That's pardoned. For what then? For iust nothing.

Againe, this assertion is contrary to good reason. For God's *Friendship*, and his *Iustice* may not be diuided in this sort, as if he were reconciled and well pleased with that creature, which hath violated his iustice, and not made satisfaction for it. Gods friendship with man followes *satisfaction* to his *Iustice*: euen as his enmity with man is a consequent of the breach of his iustice. His righteous will is transgressed, therefore he is offended. His righteous will must bee satisfied before he be pleased. So that it is a vaine speculation to thinke. *Christ hath appeased Gods anger, but not satisfied his iustice, for as much as his fauour is purchased onely by satisfaction to his iustice offended.*

3 This doctrine of *humane satisfactions*, obscures the dignity, & ouerthrowes the Force of Christ's *satisfactions*. If wee haue a share, he hath not all the glory. Nay, hee hath scarce any at all. For aske wee. For what hath *Christ* satisfied? They say, to procure God's Loue to vs. But that cannot be, vnlesse he hath satisfied his iustice. Hath he done this, or no? Yes, he hath satisfied for the *Eternity* of the punish-

ment. Yea. But how know they that? What if wee vpon their grounds say, that he hath not satisfied for the eternity of it: but only merited, that our sufferings and satisfactions should be equiualent to the eternity of the *punishment*? Especially considering that our workes according to *Bellarmino*, haue a certaine kinde of *infinite value* in them. Againe, eternity is but an accident of punishment of Sinne: the *Essentials* of it are the losse of ioy, & the sence of paine: if therefore *Christ* haue satisfied only for that, he hath done but the least part. Neuerthelesse our aduersaries will needs perswade vs, that *humane satisfactions* doe not so much *eclipse* as *illustrate* the glory of *Christs satisfactions*: in as much as thereby hee hath not only satisfied himselfe: but made vs able also to satisfie. A great matter doubtlesse. But where saith the Scripture any such matter, that *Christ* hath merited that wee might merit and satisfie. And moreover by this trick, whilest *Christ* makes vs able to merit and satisfie: his owne satisfaction is plainly excluded. For come to the point, and aske. Who is it satisfies Gods iustice for Sin? *Christ*, or wee? Here <sup>b</sup> *Bellarmino* stumbles like a blinde horse, and of three answers takes the very worst. Some say 'tis *Christ*, and he only *satisfies properly*: but we *Improperly*. Our workes being only a condition without which *Christs satisfaction* is not applied vnto vs. But such smell of the *fagot*. For 'tis a perillous *Heresie* to say, *Christ only satisfies for Sinnes*. Well others say, that both *Christ* and wee our selues doe satisfie, and also ther's two satisfactions for the same offence. But this mettall clinketh not well neither. Wherefore others are of opinion, & *Bellarmino* likes it. That we only satisfie, not *Christ*. *Tertius tamen modus probabilior videtur [Quod una tantū sit actualis satisfactio, & ea sit nostra.]* Yea this is as it should be, thrust out *Christ*, & let vs only satisfie while

d Bell. lib. 1. de  
Purgat. cap.  
14 §. quarta  
Ratio.



while he stands by and holds the Candle. Yet the *Iesuite* will not doe *Iesus* so much wrong: for marke, to mend the matter he addes. [*Neg, tamen excluditur Christus, vel satisfactio eius. Nam per eius satisfactionem habemus gratiam, unde satisfacimus. Et hoc modo nobis dicitur applicari Christi satisfactio; non quod immediate ipsa eius satisfactio tollat pœnam temporalem nobis debitam: sed quod mediatè eam tollat, quatenus gratiam ab eo habemus, sine qua nihil valeret nostra satisfactio.*] Which words they may vnderstand that can; for I cannot. The *Iesuite* walkes in the darke: seeking to hide this shamefull iniurie to the Merits of Christ, but it will not bee. 'Tis too apparant that Christ is to them of no account: Onely for a fashion they make vse of his Name, when they haue reckoned vp a bed role of their own Merits, & Saints merits, and such other trash, then to conclude all with a [*Per Iesum Christum Dominum nostrum*] That's the burden of the song, and the oyle that seasons all the Salet: as *Marnix* merrily.

4 That distinction of *Satisfaction* in *Strict iustice*, and *satisfaction* in fauorable *acceptance* is vaine in this businesse. We grant indeed that our good workes done out of *Faith* are pleasing to God, and graciously accepted of him: but can it appeare, that God accepts them as *satisfactions* to his *Iustice*? No Scripture intimates any such thing, that God's fauour doth thus dispense with his iustice; and make that *satisfaction* acceptable, which is in it selfe no full satisfaction of his *Iustice*. Shall wee thinke that God in this case is put vpon those termes of *Necessity*, and *complement* which fall out in *humane satisfactions*, betweene man and man? It may so fall out that a Creditor (to whom 1000 Crownes are owing) may bee content if the debtor will yeeld vp his whole estate, though not worth 50. Because no more can be

2. Tabula de  
differentia 4.  
part. Tom. 2. 6.  
15. 16.

Brill lib. 4. de  
Pauit. cap. 1.

had. So in case of offence, sometime, a little formality, or a word or two of confession of the wrong may be accepted for satisfaction. But God wants no meanes to receiue full satisfaction of vs, either vpon our owne persons, or vpon *Christ* for vs. And therefore 'tis without ground to imagine such a facility and partiality of his *Iustice*, as to be satisfied with a few poore complementall formalities. Satisfaction to Gods *Iustice* we acknowledge none; but such as are in *Iustice* sufficient. Such are *Christs* satisfactions. But as for vs, we haue nothing to doe with satisfactions, but with free Pardons.

5 This doctrine of humane satisfactions, taught in the Church of Rome is altogether full of uncertainty, and ergo, brings no rest and peace vnto mens consciences at all. God pardons the fault: but requires the punishment say they. But when is this? Is it alwaies? No, sometimes he pardons both. But can they tell certainly when he doth? when not? At *Martyrdom* he pardons all. How knowe they that? or how knowe they he doth it not at other times to? *Contrition* (say they) if it be vehement, satisfies for all. But can they tell vs the iust measure of that *Contrition* which is satisfactory? It may be the party is contrite enough: yet the *Priest* enioynes Penance when tis needlesse. It may be he is not contrite enough: yet no penance enioyned. Where's the certainty, what's to bee done in such a case? *Christ* (say they) hath satisfied for the *Aeternity of Hell punishment*. Well. But can they tell how many yeares or daies are left vsatisfied for; that so all things may be fitted according to the race of time? Laborious workes, of *Praiers, Fastings, Almdeeds*, satisfie for temporall punishments in this life, (say they) Suppose it be so. Are they sure they can also satisfie the paines of *Purgatory*? The *Priest* enioynes satisfactory penance. But is hee sure he enioynes iust so much as will doe the

the Feat? Is he certaine that God will take that for payment which he decrees to be paid? What if there be not *Aue-Maries* enough, &c. Againe, suppose there were *Evangelicall Counsailes*, as *Vowes of Chastity, Pouerty, &c.* and that to doe these things were pleasing vnto God. Are they sure they shall passe for *satisfactions* presently? Thou saist I giue this *Almes*, I vow *Pouerty*, I doe this and that to satisfie Gods Iustice for such or such a sinne. What? Is it a match presently, that God must doe as thou desirest: and take what thou offerest for payment? Soft there a while. Wheres the warrant for that? Those that are in *Purgatory*, when haue they satisfied enough? Who brings word, when they are deliuered? How knowes the *Pope* when he hath bestowed vpon them sufficient supererogative *Money* to pay the *Fees* of the *Prison*? Or doth *S<sup>t</sup> Michael* that holds the *Scales* send him word, when their satisfactions weigh down their sins? Not to reckon more vp; there is in all this doctrine no firme ground whereon a distressed soule may cast anchor: But when it hath once let slip that maine Cable, wherevpon it might rid it out in all stormes (*the satisfaction of Christ*) afterwards it is carried a drift vpon all hazards of Windes & Seas.

6 Their practise betraies their Opinion. Did they indeed thinke that there were any seuerity in Gods iustice, any necessitie or sufficiencie in such their satisfaction, 'tis not possible, they would prostitute such things in so base a manner, as they doe. But when an *Aue Maria*, a *Pater noster* before such or such an *Altar*; a *wax Candle* to such a *Saint*; a *kisse* of such a *cold Stone*; a *pilgrimage* to *Compostella* for *cockle shells*; a *lash* or *twaine* vpon the *Bare*; two or three *meals* *meat* forborne; a *pardon* purchased at a few *Deneirs*; yea when the roughnesse and meanesse of *Adams fig-leane breeches*

De parit. l. 4. c.  
9. sect. 5. Item.

ches shall bee accounted a worthy matter to satisfie for his sinne, as <sup>a</sup> Bellarmine most ridiculously dotes; I say, when such base trifles shall be reckoned to be *valuable satisfactions* to Gods *Iustice*: they must pardon vs if wee guesse at their meaning. They may dispute and talke while they will in big words and faire glosses of Bridles against sinnes, and I knowe not what: but in fine all prones but *Giunnes* to catch *money*: But such as serue themselves thus vpon God, & play with his Iustice, as the *fire* with the *Candle*; let them take heed, lest in the end, they be consumed by it.

b Aq. 4. v. 12.

To leaue then these vaine inventions. Let vs giue to God the *glory* that's due to his name: and so wee shall well provide for the peace of our Soules. Trusting entirely and only vnto that *Name of* <sup>b</sup> *Iesus Christ*. Besides which, there is not in *heauen*, or in *Earth* (in Man or Angell) any name, *Merit*, *Power*, *Satisfaction*, or whatsoeuer else, whereby wee may be *saued*. And thus much touching the first maine branch of the matter of our Iustification, namely, *Our owne Righteousnesse*. Whereby it appeares sufficiently, that wee shall neuer be iustified in Gods *Sight*.

Μὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ δόξα. FINIS.



sitting by violence, but according to *Dauids* example in all his behaviour towards this wicked King *Saul*, conforming our selves, and according to the rule prescribed unto us in the word of God, *Rom. 13.*

17. Last of all, we see how wonderfully the wicked are disappointed of their purposes, this *Amalekite* looked for favour, thanks, and benefit, but by wickednesse and an unjust fact to attaine thereto, especially at the hands of a godly man, was the wrong way, & therefore he is justly rewarded according to his desert, by death, thus Satan ever blindes, & deceives the wicked, like *Laban*, making them to serve for one thing promised, but changing their wages and giving them another thing in performance. You shall be like God, (said he unto *Eve*) but the contrary was found true, and *Pharaoh* thought that he wrought wisely, by burdens and bondage to waste *Israel*, & reduce them to a few number, but they increased the more, and when he had essayed all means, he proved the fool notwithstanding, making his Land to be plagued, his first borne slain, and himself with his people drowned.

11. Also we see the wicked are the cause of there own perdition, and a guilty conscience snares it self, therefore doth *David* conclude, thy blood be upon thy own head, for thy own mouth hath confessed, &c.

II. *S A M. Chap. 1. from the 17. verse to the end.*

**W**E shew in the Preface before the Chapter that the generall subject of this Book is the History of the reign of *David*, begun at the death of *Saul*, while the institution of *Salomon*.

The utilitie declares itself in the particulars, as in the confirmation of faith by the infallible performance of Gods promise to *David*, in the raising of his Kingdome, albeit after great troubles, and in the example of life and manners, as in the patience, piety, righteous government, magnanimity in adversity, prudence in prosperity, and others his vertues, and albeit as man feeble, and subject to infirmities, and falls, yet rising again by true and earnest repentance.

But because *Dauids* Kingdome is the type of Christs Kingdome in the comparison we have the chief utility to be remarked, that

by *David*, wherein as we see the nature of the wicked to be ready to commit villany upon slender motives, so we see that a wicked command upon no pretext ought to be obeyed, neither can it be free from the check of conscience, nor punishment of upright justice, all pretences being but like *Adams* figtree leaves, or his naughty excuse of his wifes entisement.

14. The respects of *David*s mourning for *Saul*, *Jonathan*, and the People, both internall, or spirituall, and externall, or naturall, I mention'd before, onely this is to be observed, that there is a double death to be lamented of Magistrates, the one corporall, as here, the other spirituall, which is the corruption of their manners, and as it is most prejudiciall, to Church, or Commonwealth, so is it most to be deplored of all, and this made *Samuel* to go home to *Ramah*, and lament for *Saul*, all his dayes, this spirituall death is a sure fore runner oftymes of a fearfull temporall.

1 *Sau*

15. V. 15. We see here the happy beginnings of a godly Kingdome, in the reward of this reporter, consisting in two points. 1. in the rejecting of dissimulate Hypocrisy, & cunning flattery, whereby this *Amalekite* had covered his greedy design of reward by counterfeiting the behaviour of those who deplored a publick calamity, by doing humble observance to *David*, by reporting a peece of acceptable service done unto him as he supposed, and by bringing *Saul*s Crown unto him, 2. In executing upright Justice upon him, who had confessed with his own mouth Cef-majesty, or treason, whereby *David*, doth as he would be done to, and cleareth himself hereby of all desire he had of *Saul*s death by any indirect means, confirming so his innocency, so frequently before attested to *Saul* himself, and the integrity of his heart.

16. It is not Lawfull then (we perceive) to any one subject for what cause soever to put violent hands on their Lawfull Prince & supream Magistrate, for if he be evill it is for our sins, therefore returne to God by unfained repentance, and pray for him & then he will either remove, or reform him in his good time, and if he command things unlawfull, let us obey rather God then man, and eschew his unjust wrath so far as we can, but if God call us to suffering, therein let our care be that we suffer not for evil doing, and yeeld patiently and constantly to the Lords calling, never in all this lifting up our hand against the Lords anointed, nor re-







